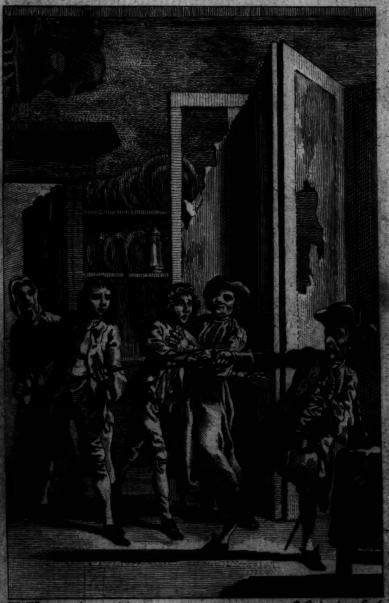


Fromispiece Vol. 1.



F. Haymon invest del .-

C. Grigmon Sculp

Published by John Ofborn according to Oct of Part Mer: 48.1748.

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

Roderick Random.

Et genus & virtus, nisi cum re, vilior alga est. Hon.

In TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

THE THIRD EDITION.



LONDON:

Printed for LOSBORN, in Pater-noster-Rown

MDCCL.

ADVENTH Roderick Rambous. Ergons & which will can be a the age of

Fined for J. Osa on r. in Paker-nother Rows.
MEOCU.



portugue i le impeculiar sisonominantes que and be Triple Toler to house

PREFACE.

main mindendrob os

F all kinds of fatire, there is none for entertaining, and univerfally improving, as that which is introduced, as it were, occasionally, in the course of an interesting story, which brings every incident home to life; and by representing familiar scenes in an uncommon and amuling point of view, invelts them with all the graces of novelty, while nature is appealed to in every particular, sanal line i ologiana est, ate

The reader gratifies his curiofity, in purfuing the adventures of a person in whose fayour he is prepoffessed; he espouses his eaufe, he sympathizes with him in distress, his indignation is heated against the authors of his calamity; the humane passions are inflamed; the contrast between dejected virtue, and infulting vice, appears with greater aggravation, and every impression having a double force on the

imagi-

flance, and the heart improves by the example. The attention is not tired with a bare catalogue of characters, but agreeably diverted with all the variety of invention; and the vicisflitudes of life appear in their peculiar circumstances, opening an ample field for wit and humour.

Romance, no doubt, owes its origin to ignorance, vanity and superstition. In the dark ages of the world, when a man had rendered himself famous for wisdom or valour, his family and adherents availed themselves of his fuperior qualities, magnified his virtues, and represented his character and person as sacred and supernatural. The vulgar easily swallowed the bait, implored his protection, and yielded the tribute of homage and praise even to adoration; his exploits were handed down to posterity with a thousand exaggerations; they were repeated as incitements to virtue; divine honours were paid, and alters erected to his memory, for the encouragement of those who attempted to imitate his example; and hence arole the heathen mythology, which is no other than a collection of extravagant Romances. As learning advanced, and genius received cultivation, these stories were embel-Thed with the graces of poetry, that they might the better recommend themselves to the attention; they were fung in publick, at festivals, for the instruction and delight of the audience; and rehearfed before battle, as incentives

centives to deeds of glory. Thus tragedy and the epic muse were born, and, in the progress of tafte, arrived at perfection. - It is no wonder, that the ancients could not relish a fable in profe, after they had feen fo remarkable events celebrated in verse, by their best poets; we therefore, find no romance among them, during the æra of their excellence, unless the Cyropædia of Zenophon may be fo called : and it was not till arts and sciences began to revive, after the irruption of the Barbarians into Europe, that any thing of this kind appeared. But when the minds of men were debauched by the imposition of priest-craft to the most absurd pitch of credulity; the authors of romance arose, and losing fight of probability, filled their performances with the most monstrous hyperboles. I If they could nor equal the antient poets in point of genius, they were resolved to excel them in fiction, and apply to the wonder rather than the judgment of their readers. Accordingly they brought necromancy to their aid, and instead of supporting the character of their heroes, by dignity of fentiment and practice, distinguished them by their bodily strength, activity and extravagance of behaviour. Although nothing could be more ludicrous and unnatural than the figures they drew, they did not want patrons and admirers, and the world actually began to be infected with the spirit of knight-errantry when Cervantes, by an inimitable piece of rie dicule, reformed the tafte of mankind, reprefenting

fenting chivalry in the right point of view, and converting romance to purposes far more useful and entertaining, by making it assume the fock, and point out the follies of ordinary life.

The fame method has been practifed by other Spanish and French authors, and by none more fuccessfully than by Monsieur Le Sage. who in his adventures of Gil Blas, has described the knavery and foibles of life, with infinite humour and fagacity. The following sheets I have modelled on his plan, taking the liberty, however, to differ from him in the execution, where I thought his particular fituations were uncommon, extravagant, or peculiar to the country in which the scene is laid. The difgraces of Gil Blas, are for the most part. fuch as rather excite mirth than compassion he himfelf laughs at them; and his transitions from distress to happiness, or at least ease, are fo fudden, that neither the reader has time to pity him, nor himself to be acquainted with affliction. This conduct, in my opinion, not only deviates from probability, but prevents that generous indignation, which ought to animate the reader, against the fordid and vicious disposition of the world. Same in vent acress al traw you but y

I have attempted to represent modest meric struggling with every difficulty to which a friendless orphan is exposed, from his own want of experience, as well as from the selfishness,

2

envy,

envy, malice, and base indifference of mankind. To fecure a favourable prepoffession. I have allowed him the advantages of birth and education, which in the feries of his misfortunes, will, I hope, engage the ingenuous more warmly in his behalf; and though I foresee. that some people will be offended at the mean scenes in which he is involved, I persuade myfelf the judicious will not only perceive the neceffity of describing those situations to which he must of course be confined, in his low estate; but also find entertainment in viewing those parts of life, where the humours and paffions are undifguifed by affectation, ceremony, or education; and the whimfical peculiarities of disposition appear as nature has implanted them. -But I believe I need not trouble myself in vindicating a practice authorized by the best writers in this way, some of whom I have already named.

1

C

3

-

1-

3

0

t

13

ns ire

to

ith

ot

nts

ni-

erit

1 2

ant

efs

vy,

Every diligent reader will, at first sight, perceive I have not deviated from nature, in the facts, which are all true in the main, although the circumstances are altered and difguised to avoid personal fatire.

It now remains, to give my reasons for making the chief personage of this work a North-Briton; which are chiefly these: I could at a small expence bestow on him such education as I thought the dignity of his birth and character required, which could not possibly be

as the nature of my plan would afford. In the next place, I could represent simplicity of manners in a remote part of the kingdom, with more propriety, than in any place near the capital; and lastly, the disposition of the Scots, addicted to travelling, justifies my conduct in deriving an adventurer from that country.

That the delicate reader may not be offended at the unmeaning oaths which proceed from the mouths of some persons in these memoirs, I beg leave to premise, that I imagined nothing could more effectually expose the absurdity of such miserable expletives, than a natural and verbal representation of the discourse in which they occur.



writes in this way; some of whom I have all ready named.

It now remains, to give my readers for making the chief per bange of this work a bloom-like the chief per bange of this work a bloom-like the character as that expense teken as him that the character he dignity of his birth and character required, which could see peffich.

CONTENTS

coffers to him -- an accident happens -- healty -

FIRST VOLUME.

CHAP. I. Of my birth and parentage.

Page 1.

CHAP. II. I grow up — am hated by my relations — fent to school — neglected by my grand father — maltreated by my master — seasoned to adversity — I form cabals against the pedant — am debarred access to my grandfather — hunted by his heir—demolish the teeth of his tutor.

p. 6.

CHAP. III. My mother's brother arrives --- relieves me --- a description of him --- goes along with me to the house of my grandfather --- is encountered by his dogs --- deseats them after a bloody engagement --- is admitted to the old gentleman --- a dialogue between them. p. 11

CHAP. IV. My grandfather makes his will --our fecond vifit --- he dies --- his will is read in
presence of all his living descendants --- the disappointment of my semale cousins --- my uncle's behaviour.

117

13

CHAP. V. The schoolmaster uses me barbarously --- I form a project of revenge, in which I am affisted by my uncle --- I leave the village --- am fettled at the university by his generosity. p. 20

CHAP. VI. I make great progress in my studies
--- am caressed by every body --- my semale cousins take notice of me --- I reject their invitation
they are incensed and conspire against me --- I am
lest destitute by a missortune that befals my uncle--Vol. I. a Gawky's

CONTENTS. Gawky's treachery --- my revenge. CHAP. VII. I am entertained by Mr. Crab --a description of him --- I acquire the art of surgery -- confult Crab's disposition - - become neceffary to him --- an accident happens --- he advifes me to launch out into the world --- affifts me with money --- I fet out for London. CHAP. VIII. I arrive at Newcastle --- meet with my old school-fellow Strap. --- we determine to walk in company to London --- fet out, on our journey --- put up at a folitary ale-house --- are disturbed by a strange adventure in the night. p. 42 CHAP. IX. We proceed on our journey --- are overtaken by an highwayman who fires at Strap, is prevented from shooting me by a company of horsemen, who ride in pursuit of him --- Strap is put to bed at an inn --- Adventures at that inn. CHAP. X. The highwayman is taken --- we are detained as evidences against him --- proceed to the next village -- he escapes --- we arrive at another inn, where we go to bed --- in the night we are awaked by a dreadful adventure --- next night we lodge at the house of a school master --our treatment there p. p. 56 CHAP. XI. We descry the waggon --- get into it --- arrive at an inn --- our fellow travellers defcribed --- a mistake is committed by Strap, which

produces strange things.

CHAP. XII. Captain Weazel challenges Strap, who declines the combat --- an affair between the captain and me --- the ufurer is fain to give Miss Tenny five guineas for a release --- we are in danger of loling a meal --- the behaviour of Weazel. Jenny, and Joey on that occasion --- an account of captain Weazel and his lady --- the captain's courage tried -- Ifaac's mirth at the captain's expence. 15 and dens and the second p. 72

CHAP. XIII. Strap and I are terrified by an apparition parition --- Strap's conjecture --- the mystery explained by Joey---we arrive at London---our dress and appearance described --- we are insulted in the Afreet -- an adventure in an ale house --- we are imposed upon by a waggish footman --- set to rights by a tobacconift --- take lodgings --- dive for a dinner -- an accident at our ordinary p. 81 CHAP. XIV. We visit Strap's friend --- a defcription of him --- his advice --- we go to Mr. Cringer's house --- are denied admittance --- an accident befals Strap --- his behaviour thereupon--an extraordinary adventure occurs; in the course of which Flofe all my money. CHAP. XV. Strap moralizes --- prefents his purse to me --- we inform our landlord of my misfortune; he unravels the mystery--- I present my. . felf to Cringer --- he recommends and turns me over to Mr. Staytape -- I become acquainted with a fellow-dependant, who explains the characters of Cringer and Staytape and informs me of the method to be purfued at the Navy-office and -Surgeon's hall 21 Strap is employed. 22 01 21 p. 97 CHAP. XVI. My new acquaintance breaks an . appointment- I proceed by myfelf to the Navy-office, address myself to a person there, who assists me with his advice - write to the board -- they grant me a letter to the furgeons at the hall --- I am informed of the beau's name and character -- find shim 44- he makes me his confident in an amour defires me to pawn my linen, for his occasions --- I recover what I lent him --- fome curious obfervations of Strap on that occasion --- his vanity. 701. de my admentes, au a résignable condition -

0

e

d

at

ht

xt

56

ito

de-

ich

63

ap,

the

lis

lan-

zel.

bunt

nin's

ex-

. 72

n ap-

ition

CHAP. XVII. I go to Surgeon's hall, where I meet with Mr. Jackson --- am examined -- a fierce dispute arises between two of the examiners --- Jackson disguises himself to attract respect --- is detected --- in hazard of being fent to Bridewellrecompany

--- he treats us at a tayern ----- carries us to a night-house, a troublesome adventure there --- we are committed to the Round-house --- carried before a justice --- his behaviour.

CHAP. XVIII. I carry my qualification to the Navy-office --- the nature of it --- the behaviour of the f---t--y --- Strap's concern for my absence --- a battle between him and a blacksmith --- the troublesome consequences of it --- his harrangue to me --- his friend the schoolmaster recommends me to a French apothecary, who entertains me as a journeyman.

CHAP. XIX. The characters of Mr. Lavement, his wife and daughter --- fome anecdotes of the family --- the mother and daughter rivals --- I am guilty of a mistake that gives me present satisfaction, but is attended with troublesome consequences.

p. 133
CHAP. XX. I am affaulted and dangerously wounded --- suspect Odonnell, and am confirmed in my opinion --- concert a scheme of revenge, and put it in execution --- Odonnell robs his own servant, and disappears --- I make my addresses to a lady, and am miraculously delivered from her snare.

CHAP. XXI. Squire Gawky comes to lodge with my master --- is involved in a troublesome affair, out of which he is extricated by me --- he marries my master's daughter --- they conspire against me --- I am found guilty of thest --- discharged --- deserted by my friends- I hire a room in St. Giles's --- where, by accident, I find the lady to whom I made my addresses, in a miserable condition --- I relieve her.

CHAP. XXII. The history of Miss Williams.

CHAP. XXIII. She is interrupted by a bailiff's who arrests, and carries her to the Marshalfea --- I accompany

accompany her --- bring withesses to prove the is not the person named in the writ --- the bailiff is fain to give her a present, and discharge her --- we shift our lodging --- she resumes her story and ends it --- my resections thereupon --- she makes me acquainted with the progress of a common woman of the town --- resolves to quit that way of life.

CHAP. XXIV. I am reduced to great mifery --affaulted on Tower-hill by a prefs-gang, who put
me on board a tender --- my ufage there --- my
arrival on board of the Thunder man of war,
where I am put in irons, and afterwards released
by the good offices of Mr. Thomson, who recommends me as affistant to the surgeon --- he relates
his own story, and makes me acquainted with the
characters of the captain, surgeon, and first mate.

n

3

y

ed

be

r-

3

re.

42

ith

ir,

ies

me

es's

om

149

11

160

any

CHAP. XXV. The behaviour of Mr. Morgan
— his pride, displeasure and generosity --- the
coconomy of our mess described --- Thomson's further friendship --- the nature of my duty explained
—— the situation of the sick.

p. 199

CHAP. XXVI. A disagreeable accident happens to me in the discharge of my office — Morgan's nose is offended — a dialogue between him and the ship's steward — upon examination, I find more causes of complaint than one — my hair is cut off — Morgan's cookery — the manner of sleeping on board — I am waked in the night by a dreadful noise — p. 205

CHAP. XXVII. I acquire the friendship of the surgeon, who procures a warrant for me, and makes me a present of cloaths—a battle between a midshipman and me—the surgeon—leaves the ship—the captain comes on board with another surgeon—a dialogue between the captain and. Morgan—the sick are ordered to be brought up-

110

on the quarter-deck and examined — the confequences of that order — a madman accuses Morgan, and is set at liberty by command of the captain, whom he instantly attacks and pummels without mercy.

C H A P. XXVIII. The captain enraged, threatens to put the madman to death with his own hand — is diverted from that resolution by the arguments and persuasion of the first lieutenant and surgeon — we set sail for St. Helens, join the sleet under the command of Sir C-n-r O-le, and proceed for the West Indies — are overtaken by a terrible tempest — my friend Jack Rattlin has his leg broke by a fall from the main-yard — the behaviour of doctor Mackshane — Jack opposes the amputation of his limb, in which he is seconded by Morgan and me, who undertake the cure, and perform it successfully.

taken up and imprisoned for a spy — Morgan meets with the same fate — Thomson is tampered with to turn evidence against us — distains the proposal, and is maltreated for his integrity — Morgan is released to assist the surgeon during an engagement with som: French ships of war — I remain settered on the poop, exposed to the enemy's shot, and grow delirious with sear — am comforted after the battle by Morgan, who speaks freely of the captain; is overheard by the centimel, who informs against him, and again imprisoned — Thomson grows desperate, and notwithstanding the remonstrances of Morgan and me, goes over-board in the night.

CHAP. XXX. We lament the fate of our companion -- the captain offers Morgan his liberty, which he refuses to accept -- we are brought before him and examined --- Morgan is fent back to custody, whither also I am remanded, after a curious trial.

C H A P. XXXI. I discover a subornation against me, by means of a quarrel between two of the evidences; in consequence of which, I am set at liberty, and prevail upon Morgan to accept of his freedom on the same terms — Mackshane's malice— we arrive at Januaica, from whence in a short time we beat up to Hispaniola, in conjunction with the West-Indian squadron— we take in water, sail again, and arrive at Carthagena— reflections on our conduct there.

C H A P. XXXII. Our land forces being difembarked, erect a fascine battery --- our ship is ordered, with four more, to batter the fort of Bocca-Chica --- Mackshane's cowardice --- the chaplain's phrenzy --- honest Rattlin loses one hand --- his heroism, and reflections on the battle --- Crampley's behaviour to me during the hear of the fight.

19 your Start I made where I make myle! C H A P. XXXIII. A breach being made in the walls, our foldiers give the affault, and take the place without opposition --- our sailors at the same time become mafters of all the other strengths near Bocca Chica, and take possession of the harbour --- the good consequence of this success --- we move nearer the town --- find two forts deferted. and the channel blocked up with funk veffels; which however, we find means to clear -- land our foldiers at La Quinta --- repulse a body of militia --- attack the castle of St. Lazar, and are forced to retreat with great loss --- the remains of our army are re-embarked --- an effort of the admiral to take the town .-- the economy of our expedition described.

e

,

m

ks

i-.

i-

h-

le;

25

n-

e-

to

ly,

described.

C H A P. XXXIV. An epidemick fever rages among us --- we abandon our conquests --- I am seized with the distemper; write a petition to the captain.

ca, cain,

captain, which is rejected — I am in danger of fuffocation through the malice of Crampley; and relieved by a serjeant — my fever increases — the chaplain wants to confess me — I obtain a favourable crisis — Morgan's affection for me proved — the behaviour of Mackshane and Crampley towards me — Captain Oakhum is removed into another ship with his beloved doctor — our new captain described — an adventure of Morgan.

p. 258

CHAP. XXXV. Captain Whiffle fends for me his lituation described --- his surgeon arrives, preforibes for him, and puts him to bed --- a bed is put up for Mr. Simper contiguous to the flateroom, which, with other parts of the captain's behaviour, gives the ship's company a very unfavourable idea of their commander --- I am detained in the West-Indies, by the admiral, and go on board of the Lizard floop of war, in quality of furgeon's mate, where I make myfelf known to the furgeon, who treats me very kindly --- I go on shore, sell my ticket, purchase necessaries, and at my return on board, am furprized at the fight of Crampley, who is appointed lieutenant of the floop, - we fail on a cruize --- take a prize, in which I arrive at Port Morant, under the command of my mes-mate, with whom I live in great harmony.

p. 268
CHAP. XXXVI. A strange adventure --- in confequence of which I am extremely happy --Crampley does me ill offices with the captain but his malice is deseated by the good nature and friendship of the surgeon --- We return to Port Royal --- our captain gets the command of a larger ship, and is succeeded by an old man --Brayl is provided for --- we receive orders to sail for England.

p. 274

m



THE

ADVENTURES

OF

RODERICK RANDOM.

CHAP. I.

Of my birth and parentage.

n

at

of

ıy

58

n-

1

out

nd

ort f a

fail

Vol.I.

WAS born in the northern part of this united kingdom in the house of my grandfather, a gentleman of considerable fortune and influence, who had on many occasions signalized himself in behalf of his country; and was remarkable for his abilities in the law, which he exercised with great success in quality of a judge, particularly against beggars, for whom he had a singular aversion.

My father, (his youngest son) falling in love with a poor relation, who lived with the old gentleman, in quality of house-keeper, espoused her privately; and I was the first fruit of that marriage.—During her pregnancy, a dream discomposed my mother so much, that her husband, tired with her importunity, at last consulted a highland seer, whose savourable interpretation he would have secured before-hand by a bribe, but sound him incorruptible. She dreamed,

the was delivered of a tennis-ball, which the devil (who, to her great surprize, acted the part of a midwife) struck so forcibly with a racket, that it disappeared in an inftant; and she was for some time inconfolable for the loss of her off-spring; when all of a sudden, she beheld it return with equal violence, and enter the earth, beneath her feet, whence immediately forung up a goodly tree covered with bloffoms, the scent of which operated so strongly on her nerves that she awoke. The attentive fage, after some deliberation, assured my parents, that their first-born would be a great traveller, that he would undergo many dangers and difficulties, and at last return to his native land, where he would flourish in happiness and reputation. - How truly this was foretold, will appear in the fequel.-It was not long before fome officious person informed my grandfather of certain familiarities that paffed between his fon and housekeeper, which alarmed him fo much, that, a few days after, he told my father it was high time for him to think of fettling; and that he had provided a match for him, to which he could in justice have no objections. My father, finding it would be impossible to conceal his fituation much longer, frankly owned what he had done, and excused himself for not having asked the confent of his father, by saying, he knew it would have been to no purpose; and that, had his inclination been known, my grandfather might have taken fuch measures as would have effectually put the gratification of it out of his power: he added, that no exceptions could be made to his wife's virtue, birth, beauty, and good fense, and as for fortune, it was beneath his care. - The old gentleman, who kept all his passions (except one) in excellent order, heard him to an end with great temper; and then calmly asked, how he proposed to maintain himself and spouse?--He replied, he could be in no danger of wanting. while his father's tenderness remained, which he and

fe

na

the

fee

his wife should always cultivate with the utmost veneration; that he was perfuaded his allowance would be suitable to the dignity and circumstances of his family, and to the provision already made for his brothers and fifters, who were happily fettled under his protection. - Your brothers and fifters, faid my grandfather, did not think it beneath them to confult me in an affair of fuch importance as matrimony; neither (I suppose) would you have omitted that piece of duty, had you not some secret fund in reserve; to the comforts of which I leave you, with a defire that you will this night feek out another habitation for yourfelf and wife, whither, in a short time, I will fend you an account of the expence I have been at in your education, with a view of being reimburfed. -Sir, you have made the grand tour—you are a polite gentleman - a very pretty gentleman - I wish you a great deal of joy, and am your very humble fervant. So faying, he left my father in a fituation eafily imagined. However, he did not long hefitate; for being perfectly well acquainted with his father's disposition, he did not doubt that he was glad of this pretence to get rid of him; and his refolves being invariable as the laws of the Medes and Persians, he knew it would be to no purpose to attempt him by prayers and intreaties; fo without any farther application, he betook himself with his disconsolate bedfellow to a farm-house, wherean old fervant of his mother dwelt; there they remained fome time in a fituation but ill adapted to the elegance of their defires and tenderness of their love; which nevertheless my father chose to endure, ratherthan supplicate an unnatural and inflexible parent: but my mother forefeeing the inconveniencies to which she must have been expofed, had the been delivered in this place (and her pregnancy was very far advanced) without communicating her delign to her husband, went in disguise to the house of my grandfather, hoping that her tears and condition would move him to compassion, and reconcile him to an cvent

e

at

h,

as

all

m d, eyent which was now irrevocably past.—She found means to deceive the fervants, and was introduced as an unfortunate lady, who wanted to complain of fome matrimonial grievances, it being my grandfather's particular province to decide in all cases of scandal. She was accordingly admitted into his presence, where discovering herself, the fell at his feet, and in the most affecting manner, implored his forgiveness; at the fame time, representing the danger that threatned not only her life, but that of his own grand-child which was about to fee the light. - He told her, he was forry that the indifcretion of her and his fon had compelled him to make a vow, which put it out of his power to give them any affiftance. - That he had already imparted his thoughts on that subject to her husband, and was surprised that they should disturb his peace with any further importunity. - This faid, he retired .- The violence of my mother's affliction had fuch an effect on her constitution, that she was immediately feized with the pains of childbed; and had not an old maid-fervant to whom she was very dear, afforded her pity and affiftance, at the hazard of incuring my grandfather's displeasure, she and the innocent fruit of ber womb must have fallen miserable victims to his rigour and inhumanity. - By the friendship of this poor woman, the was carried up to a garret, and immediately delivered of a man-child, the story of whose unfortunate birth, he himself now relates .-My father being informed of what had happened, flew to the embraces of his darling spouse, and while he loaded his off-spring with paternal caresses, could not forbear sheddinga flood of tears, on beholding the dear partner of his heart (for whose ease he would have facrificed the treasures of the east) stretched upon a flock-bed in a miserable apartment unable to protect her from the inclemencies of the weather. - It is not to be supposed that the old gentleman was ignorant of what passed, tho' he affected to know nothing of the matter, and pretended to be very much furprized, when one of his grandchildren, by his eldeft fon deceased, who lived with him as his heir apparent, acquainted him with the affair; he determined therefore to observe no medium, but immediately (on the third day after her delivery) fent her a peremptory order to be gone, and turned off the fervant who had preserved her life. This behaviour so exasperated my father, that he had recourse to the most dreadful imprecations, and on his bare knees implored that heaven would renounce him if ever he should forget or forgive the barbarity of his fire. - The injuries which this unhappy mother received from her removal in fuch circumstances, and the want of necessaries where the lodged, together with her grief and anxiety of mind, foon threw her into a languishing diforder which put an end to her life. My father, who loved her tenderly, was so affected with her death, that he remained fix weeks deprived of his fenses; during which time, the people where he lodged carried the infant to the old man, who relented fo far, on hearing the melancholy story of his daughter in-law's death, and the deplorable condition of his fon, as to fend the child to nurse, and ordered my father to be carried home to his house, where he soon recovered the use of his reason. - Whether this hard-hearted judge felt any remorfe for his cruel treatment of his fon and daughter; or (which is more probable) was afraid his character would fuffer in the neighbourhood; he profelled great forrow for his conduct tomy father, whose delirium was succeeded by a profound melancholy and referve. At length he disappeared, and notwithstanding all imaginable inquiry, could not be heard of, which confirmed most people in the opinion of his having made away with himself in a fit of despair. -How I understood the particulars of my birth, will appear in the course of these memoirs.

t

IS

d

of

d,

ile

ıld

he

uld

on

no-

ning

ot

B 3

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

I grow up—am hated by my relations—sent 19 school—neglected by my grandfather—malireated by my master—seasoned to adversity—I form cabals against the pedant—am debarred access to my grandfather—bunted by his heir—I demolish the teeth of his tutor.

THERE were not wanting some, who suspected my uncles of being concerned in my father's fite, on the supposition that they would all share in the patrimony destined for him: and this conjecture was strengthened by reflecting, that in all his calamities they never discovered the least inclination to ferve him; but on the contrary, by all the artifices in their power, fed his father's refentment. and supported his resolution of leaving him to misery and want .- But people of judgment treated this infinuation as an idle chimera; because had my relations been so wicked as to consult their interest by committing such an atrocious crime, the fate of my father would have extended to me too, whose life was another obstacle to their expectation. - Mean while, I grew apace, and as I strongly resembled my father, who was the darling of the tenants, I wanted nothing which their indigent circumstances could afford: but their favour was a weak resource against the jealous enmity of my cousins; who, the more my infancy promised, conceived the more implacable hatred against me; and before I was fix years of age, had so effectually blockaded my grandfather, that I never faw him but by stealth, when I fometimes made up to his chair as he fat to view his labourers in the field: on which occasions, he would stroak my head, bid

me be a good boy, and promise to take care of me. I was foon after fent to school at a village hard by, of which he had been dictator time out of mind: but as he neither paid for my board, nor fupplied me with cloaths, books, and other necessaries I required, my condition was very ragged and contemptible, and the schoolmaster, who through fear of my grandfather taught me gratis, gave himself no concern about the progress I made under his instruction.- In spite of all these difficulties and disgraces, I became a good proficient in the Latin tongue; and as foon as I could write tolerably, peffered my grandfather with letters to fuch a degree, that he fent for my mafter, and chid him feverely for bestowing such pains on my education, telling him, that if ever I should be brought to the gallows for forgery, which he had taught me to commit, my blood would lie on his head. - The pedant, who dreaded nothing more than the displeasure of his patron, affured his honour that the boy's ability was more owing to his own genius and application, than to any instruction or encouragement he received; that although he could not divest him of the knowledge he had already imbibed, unless he would impower him to disable his fingers, he should endeavour, with God's help, to prevent his future improvement. And indeed, he punctually performed what he had undertaken: for, on pretence that I had wrote impertinent letters to my grandfather, he caused a board to be made with five holes in it, through which he thrust the fingers and thumb of my righthand, and fastened it by whip-cord to my wrist, in fuch a manner as effectually debarred me the use of my pen. But this restraint I was freed from in a few days by an accident which happened in a quarrel between me and another boy, who taking upon him to infult my poverty, I was so incenfed at his ungenerous reproach, that with one stroke of my machine, I cut him to the skull, to the great terror of mys If B 4

)-

I r,

ng

ut

us

cy

a-

ver

up

ld:

bid

me

and school-fellows, who left him bleeding on the ground, and ran to inform the mafter of what had happened. I was so severely punished for this trespals, that, were I to live to the age of Methusalem, the impression it made on me would not be effaced; no more than the antipathy and horror I conceived for the merciless tyrant who inflicted it. The contempt which my appearance naturally produced, in all who faw me, the continual wants to which I was exposed, and my own haughty disposition, impatient of affronts, involved me in a thousand troublesome adventures, by which I was at length enured to adverfity, and emboldened to undertakings far above my years. I was often inhumanly fcourged for crimes I did not commit, because having the character of a vagabond in the village, every piece of mischief whose author lay unknown, was charged upon me. I have been found guilty of robbing orchards I never entered, of killing cats I never hurted, of fealing gingerbread I never touched, and of abusing old women I never faw. - Nay, a stammering carpenter had eloquence enough to persuade my master, that I fired a pistol loaded with small shot into his window; though my landlady and the whole family bore witness, that I was a-bed fast asleep at the time when this outrage was committed. - I was once flogged for having narrowly escaped drowning, by the finking of a ferryboat in which I was passenger. - Another time for having recovered of a bruife occasioned by a horse and cart running over me. - A third time for being bit by a baker's dog .- In short, whether I was guilty or unfortunate, the correction and sympathy of this arbitrary pedagogue were the fame. Far from being fubdued by this infernal ulage, my indignation triumphed over that flavish awe which had hitherto enforced my obedience; and the more my years and knowledge increased, the more I perceived the injustice and barbarity of his behaviour. By the help of an 1,

d

1-

in

23

nt

ne

r-

ny

· I

fa

ose

we

ed,

ead

ver

nce

Itol

my

at I

age

ry-

ha-

and

t by

un-

rbi-

fub-

nph-

rced

flice

of an

un-

uncommon genius, and the advice and direction of our usher, who had served my father in his travels, I made a furprising progress in the classicks, writing and arithmetick; fo that before I was twelve years old, I was allowed by every body to be the best scholar in the school: This qualification, together with a boldness of temper, and strength of make, which had subjected almost all my cotemporaries, gave me such influence over them, that I began to form cabals against my persecutor; and was in hopes of being able to bid him defiance in a very short time. - Being at the head of a faction confifting of thirty boys, most of them of my own age, I was determined to put their mettle to trial, that I might know how far they were to be depended upon, before I put my grand scheme in execution: with this view we attacked a body of frout apprentices, who had taken possession of a part of the ground allotted to us, for the scene of our diversions, and who were then playing at nine-pins on the fpot: but I had the mortification to fee my adherents routed in an instant, and a leg of one of them broke in his flight by the bowl, which one of our adversaries had detached in pursuit of us .- This discomfiture did not hinder us from engaging them afterwards in frequent skirmishes, which we maintained by throwing stones at a distance, wherein I received many wounds, the scars of which still remain. Our enemies were fo harraffed and interrupted by thefe alarms, that they at last abandoned their conquest, and left us to the peaceable enjoyment of our own territories.—It would be endless to enumerate the exploits we performed in the course of this confederacy, which became the terror of the whole village; infomuch, that when different interests divided it, one of the parties commonly courted the affiftance of Roderick Random (by which name I was known) to cast the balance, and keep the opposite faction in awe .- Meanwhile, I took the advantage of every play-day, to prepresent myself before my grandfather, to whom I feldom found access, by reason of his being closely befieged by a numerous family of his female grandchildren, who, tho' they perpetually quarrelled among themselves, never failed to join against me, as the common enemy of all. His heir, who was about the age of eighteen, minded nothing but fox-hunting, and indeed was qualified for nothing elfe, notwithstanding his grandfather's indulgence, in entertaining a tutor for him at home; who at the same time performed the office of parish clerk. This young Acteon, who inherited his grandfather's antipathy to every thing in diffress, never fet eyes on me, without uncoupling his beagles, and hunting me into fome cottage or other, whither I generally fled for shelter. In this christian amusement, he was encouraged by his preceptor, who, no doubt, took fuch opportunities to ingratiate himself with the rising sun, observing that the old gentleman, according to the course of nature, had not long to live, being already on the verge of fourfcore. - The behaviour of this rafcally fycophant incenfed me fo much, that one day, when I was beleagured by him and his hounds in a farmer's house, where I had found protection, I took aim at him (being an excellent markiman) with a large pebble, which struck out four of his fore-teeth, and effectually incapacitated him for doing the office of a clerk.

it should be enabled to concentrate of a sufficient

er and a control of the control of the - Meanby and the start of the contract of the start of the contract of

of the calculation to the design of the

To anon semi-discount of the many

and the located of the bear of the selfthe same and a sure which

magada --- rens hid roban table show hour

CHAP. III.

My mother's brother arrives—relieves me— a description of him—he goes along with me to the house of my grandfather—is encountered by his dogs—defeats them after a bloody engagement—is admitted to the old gentleman—a dialogue between them.

BOUT this time, my mother's only brother. who had been long abroad, lieutenant of a man of war, arrived in his own country; where being informed of my condition, he came to fee me. and out of his flender finances, not only supplied me with what necessaries I wanted for the present, but refolved not to leave the country, until he had prevailed on my grandfather to fettle fomething handfome for the future. This was a task to which he was by no means equal, being entirely ignorant not only of the judge's disposition, but also of the ways of men in general, to which his education on board had kept him an utter stranger .--- He was a strongbuilt man, fomewhat bandy-legged, with a neck like that of a bull, and a face which (you might eafily perceive) had withflood the most obstinate affaults of the weather .-- His dress consisted of a foldier's coat altered for him by the ship's taylor, a striped flannel jacket, a pair of red breeches, japanned with pitch. clean grey worsted stockings, large silver buckles that covered three fourths of his shoes, a silver laced hat whose crown over-looked the brims about an inch and a half, a black bob wig in buckle, a check thirt, a filk handkerchief, an hanger with a brafs handle girded to his thigh by a tarnished laced belt, and a good

good oak plant under his arm .-- Thus equipt, he fet out with me (who by his bounty made a very decent appearance) for my grandfather's house, where we were faluted by Jowler and Cæsar, whom my cousin, young mafter, had let loofe at our approach. Being well acquainted with the inveteracy of these curs, I was about to betake myself to my heels, when my uncle feizing me with one hand, brandished his cudgel with the other, and at one blow laid Cæfar sprawling on the ground: but finding himself attacked at the fame time in the rear by Jowler, and fearing Cæfar might recover, drew his hanger, wheel'd about, and by a lucky stroke, severed Jowler's head from his body. - By this time, the young fox-hunter and three fervants armed with pitch-forks and flails, were come to the affiftance of the dogs, whom they found breathless upon the field; and my cousin was fo provoked at the death of his favourites, that he ordered his attendants to advance, and take vengeance on their executioner, whom he loaded with all the curses and reproaches his anger could fuggest. - Upon which my uncle stept forwards with an undaunted air, at the fight of whose bloody weapon his antagonists fell back with precipitation, when he accosted their leader thus: -" Lookee, brother, your dogs having boarded me without provocation, what I did was in my own defence. - So you had best be civil, and let us shoot " a-head, clear of you." Whether the young fquire misinterpreted my uncle's desire of peace, or was enraged at the fate of his hounds beyond his usual pitch of resolution, I know not; but he snatched a flail from one of his followers, and came up with a shew of affaulting the lieutenant, who putting himself in a posture of defence, proceeded thus :-- " Lookee, you lubberly fon of a w-e, if you come athwait " me, 'ware your ginger-bread-work.-I'll be foul " of your quarter, d-n me." This declaration followed by a flourish of his hanger, seem'd to check

the progress of the young gentleman's choler, who, looking behind him, perceived his attendants had flunk into the house, shut the gate, and left him to decide the contention by himfelf. - Here a parley enfued, which was introduced by my coufin's asking, "Who the d-1 are you?-What do you want?-"Some scoundrel of a seaman, (I suppose) who has " deferted and turned thief .-- But don't think you shall " escape, firrah, -- I'll have you hanged, you dog, I will " -Your blood shall pay for that of my two hounds, " you ragamuffin.—I would not have parted with " them to fave your whole generation from the gal-" lows, you ruffian, you." -- " None of your jaw, " you fwab, -none of your jaw (replied my uncle) e else I shall trim your laced jacket for you. - I shall " rub you down with an oaken towel, my boy-I " shall." -- So faying, he sheathed his hanger and grafped his cudgel. Mean-while the people of the house being alarm'd, one of my female cousins opened a window, and asked what was the matter?-" The " matter! (answered the lieutenant) no great matter. " young woman.—I have business with the old gen-" tleman, and this spark, belike, won't allow me to " come along-fide of him, that's all." - After a few minutes pause, we were admitted and conducted to my grand/ather's chamber, through a lane of my relations, who honoured me with very fignificant looks, as I passed along. - When we came into the judge's presence, my uncle, after two or three sea-bows, expreffed himself in this manner :- "Your servant, your " fervant. - What chear, father? what chear? - I " fuppose you don't know me - may-hap you don't--" My name is Tom Bowling, --- and this here boy, " you look as if you did not know him neither, --- 'tis " like you mayn't .-- He's new-rigged, i faith; his cloth "don't shake in the wind so much as it wont to do. "Tis my nephew, d'ye see, Roderick Random,-" your own flesh and blood, old gentleman. Don't " lag

" lag a-stern, you dog, (pulling me forward)." My grandfather (who was laid up with the gout) received this relation, after his long absence, with that coldness of civility which was peculiar to him; told him he was glad to fee him, and defired him to fit down .---"Thank ye, thank ye, fir, I had as lief stand, (faid " my uncle) for my own part I defire nothing of you; but if you have any conscience at all, do some-66 thing for this poor boy, who has been used at a " very unchristian rate --- Unchristian do I call it?--" I am fure the Moors in Barbary have more huma-" nity than to leave their little ones to want,--- I " would fain know why my fifter's fon is more neg-" lected than that there Fair-weather Jack, (pointing to the young fquire, who with the rest of my cousins had followed us into the room.) " Is he not as near " a-kin to you as the other ?--- Is not he much hand-" fomer and better built than that great chucklehead? "-- Come, come, confider, old gentleman, you are " going in a short time to give an account of your evil actions .-- Remember the wrongs you did his father; and make all the fatisfaction in your power, before it be too late .-- The least thing you can do, is to fettle his father's portion on him."--- The young ladies, who thought themselves too much concerned, to contain themselves any longer, set up their throats all together against my protector .-Scurvy companion, -- faucy tarpawlin, -- rude, imof pertinent fellow, did he think to prescribe to grandopapa. - His fifter's brat had been too well taken care " of. - Grandpapa was too just not to make a diffe-" rence between an unnatural rebellious fon, and " his dutiful loving children who took his advice in ss all things;" and fuch expressions, were vented against him with great violence; until the judge at length commanded filence.—He calmly rebuked my uncle for his unmannerly behaviour, which he faid

he would excuse on account of his education: he told him he had been very kind to the boy, whom he had kept at school seven or eight years, although he was informed he made no progress in his learning; but was addicted to all manner of vice, which he rather believed, because he himself was witness to a barbarous piece of mischief he had committed on the jaws of his chaplain.—But however, he would fee what the lad was fit for, and bind him apprentice to some honeft tradesman or other, provided he would mend his manners, and behave for the future as became him. -The honest tar (whose pride and indignation boiled within him) answered my grandfather, that it was true he had fent him to school, but it had cost him nothing, for he had never been at one shilling expence, to furnish him with food, raiment, books, or other necessaries; fo that it was not to be much wondered at, if the boy made small progress; and yet, whoever told him fo, was a lying lubberly rafcal, and deserved to be keel-hauled: for thof he (the lieutenant) did not understand those matters himself, he was well informed as how, Rory was the best scholar of his age, in all the country; the truth of which he would maintain, by laying a wager of his whole half year's pay on the boy's head; -- (with these words he pulled out his purfe, and challenged the company) - Neither is he predicted to vice, as you affirm, but rather left like a wreck (d'ye see) at the mercy of the wind and weather, by your neglect, old gentleman. - As for what happened to your chaplain, I am only forry, that he did not knock out the scoundrel's brains, instead of his teeth .- By the Lord, if ever I come up with him, he had better be in Greenland,—that's all.—Thank you for your courteous offer, of binding the lad apprentice to a tradefman, I suppose you would make a taylor of him would you ?- I had rather fee him hang'd d ye fee. - Come along, Rory, I perceive how the land lies, my boy, --- let's

e

-

d

n

ed

åt

id

he

—let's tack about, i'faith,—while I have a shilling, thou shan't want a tester.—B'wye, old gentleman, you're bound for the other world, but I believe damnably ill provided for the voyage.—Thus ended our visit, and we returned to the village, my uncle muttering curses all the way against the old shark and the young fry that surrounded him.

CHAP. IV.

My grandfather makes his will—our second visit
—be dies—bis will is read in presence of
all his living descendents—the disappointment
of my female cousins—my uncle's behaviour.

FEW weeks after our first visit, we were informed that the old judge, at the end of a fit of thoughtfulness, which lasted three days, had sent for a notary and made his will; that the diftemper had mounted from his legs to his stomach, and being conscious of his approaching end, he had defired to fee all his descendents without exception. - In obedience to this fummons, my uncle fet out with me a fecond time, to receive the last benediction of my grandfather; often repeating by the road, "Ey, ey, we have brought up the old hulk at laft. - You shall " fee, - you shall fee the effect of my admonition."-When we entered his chamber, which was crowded with his relations, we advanced to the bed-fide, where we found him in his last agonies, supported by two of his grand-daughters, who fat on each fide of him, fobbing most piteously, and wiping away the froth and flaver as it gathered on his lips, which they frequently kiffed with a shew of great anguish and affection.-My uncle approached him with these words, "What! " he's not a-weigh. - How fare ye - how fare ye, old " gentle-

ee None

" gentleman? - Lord have mercy upon your poor " finful foul." -- Upon which the dying man turned his languid eyes towards us, and Mr. Bowling went on- "Here's poor Rory come to fee you be-" fore you die, and receive your bleffing.-What " man! don't despair, - you have been a great sinner, "'tis true, -what then? There's a righteous judge " above, - an't there? He minds me no more than " a porpuls. - Yes, yes, he's a going, - the land-" crabs will have him, I fee that; his anchor's a-" peak, i'faith."—This homely confolation scandalized the company so much, and especially the parfon, who probably thought his province invaded, that we were obliged to retire into another room, where in a few minutes, we were convinced of my grandfather's decease, by a dismal yell uttered by the young ladies in his apartment; whither we immediately haftened, and found his heir, who had retired a little before into a closet under pretence of giving vent to his forrow, asking, with a countenance beslubbered with tears, if his grandpapa was certainly dead? -"Dead! (fays my uncle, looking at the body) ay, " ay, I'll warrant him as dead as a herring. - Odd's " fish! now my dream is out for all the world.-I " thought I stood upon the fore-castle, and saw a par-" cel of carrion crows foul of a dead shark that float-" ed alongfide, and the devil perching on our sprit-" fail-yard, in the likeness of a blue bear - who, " d'ye see, jumped over-board upon the carcase, and " carried it to the bottom in his claws." - " Out "upon thee, reprobate (cries the parson) out upon " thee, blasphemous wretch! - Dost thou think his " honour's foul is in the possession of Satan?"-The clamour immediately arose, and my poor uncle, who was shouldered from one corner of the room to the other, was obliged to lug out in his own defence, and Iwear he would turn out for no man, till fuch time as he knew who had a title to fend him a-drift.—

fit

nt

er

ng

to

li-

fe-

ny

y,

all

led

ere

of

b-

ind

tly

at!

old

tle-

"None of your tricks upon travellers (faid he;) may-" hap old buff has left my kinfman here, his heir; -"If he has, it will be the better for his miserable " foul.—Odds bob! I'd desire no better news. - I'd " foon make a clear ship, I warrant you."-To avoid any further disturbance, one of my grandfather's executors, who was prefent, affured Mr. Bowling, that his nephew should have all manner of justice; that a day should be appointed, after the funeral, for examining the papers of the deceafed, in presence of all his relations; till which time every desk and cabinet in the house should remain close sealed; and that he was very welcome to be witness to this ceremony, which was immediately performed to his fatisfaction. In the mean time, orders were given to provide mourning for all the relations, in which number I was included; but my uncle would not fuffer me to accept of it, until I should be affured whether or no I had reason to honour his memory so far. - During this interval, the conjectures of people, with regard to the old gentleman's will, were various: as it was well known, he had, befides his landed estate, which was worth 700 l. per annum, fix or feven thousand pounds at interest; some imagined, that the whole real estate (which he had greatly improved) would go to the young man whom he always entertained as his heir; and that the money would be equally divided between my female cousins (five in number) and me. —Others were of opinion, that as the rest of his children had been already provided for, he would only bequeath two or three hundred pounds to each of his grand-daughters, and leave the bulk of the fum to me, to attone for his unnatural usage of my father.--At length the important hour arrived, and the will was produced in the midst of the expectants, whose looks and gestures formed a groupe that would have been very entertaining to an unconcerned spectator.-But the reader can scarce conceive the aftonishment and

and mortification that appeared, when an attorney pronounced aloud, the young fquire fole heir of all his grandfather's eftate personal and real. - My uncle, who had liftened with great attention, fucking the head of his cudgel all the while, accompanied thefe words of the attorney with a stare, and whew, that alarmed the whole affembly. The eldest and pertest of my female competitors, who had been always very officious about my grandfather's person, enquired with a faultering accent, and vifage as yellow as an orange, "if there was no legacies?" and was answered, " none at all." - Upon which she fainted away. -The rest, whose expectations (perhaps) were not fo fanguine, supported their disappointment with more resolution, though not without giving evident marks of indignation, and grief at least as genuine as that which appeared in them at the old gentleman's death. My conductor, after having kicked with his heel for fome time against the wainscot, began : " So there's " no legacy, friend, ha !- here's an old fuccubus ;-"but somebody's soul howls for it, d-n me!" -The parson of the parish, who was one of the executors, and had acted as ghoftly director to the old man. no fooner heard this, than he cried out, " Avaunt, " unchristian reviler! avaunt! wilt thou not allow " the foul of his honour to rest in peace?"-But this zealous pastor did not find himself so warmly seconded, as formerly, by the young ladies, who now joined my uncle against him, and accused him of having acted the part of a busy body with their grandpapa, whose ears he had certainly abused by false stories to their prejudice, or else he would not have neglected them in fuch an unnatural manner.—The young squire was much diverted with this scene, and whilpered to my uncle, that if he had not murdered his dogs, he would have shewn him glorious fun, by hunting a black badger (so he term'd the clergyman.) -The furly lieutenant, who was not in an humour

,

e

İ

0

g

IS

h

d

e

0

is

d

e.

1-

e-

is

e,

-

ill

fe.

ve

nt

nd

to relish this amusement, replied, "You and your dogs may be d—ned.—I suppose you'll find them with your old dad, in the latitude of hell.—Come, Rory—about ship, my lad, we must steer another course, I think."—and away we went.



CHAP. V.

The School-master uses me barbarously. —I form a project of revenge, in which I am assisted by my uncle — I leave the village — am settled at an university by his generosity.

N our way back to the village, my uncle spoke not a word during the space of a whole hour, but whiftled with great vehemence, the tune of, Why should we quarrel for riches, &c. his visage being contracted all the while into a most formidable frown. At length his pace increased to such a degree, that I was left behind a confiderable way, which when he perceived, he waited for me; and when I was almost up with him, called out in a furly tone, " Bear a " hand, damme! must I bring to every minute for " you, you lazy dog." - Then laying hold of me by the arm, hauled me along until his good nature (of which he had a great share) and reflection, getting the better of his passion, he said, "Come, my boy, " don't be cast down, - the old rascal is in hell, -" that's some satisfaction; - you shall go to sea with " me, my lad. - A light heart and a thin pair of " breeches, goes through the world, brave boys; as the " fong goes - eh!" - Though this proposal did not at all fuit my inclination, I was afraid of discovering my aversion to it, lest I should disoblige the only friend I had in the world; and he was fo much a fea-

28

fu

m

cu ne fit

an

fai

fcl

gu

m

by

pr

da

to

de

me

pe

the

an

in

to

ma

an

the

aff

ma

by

de

man, that he never dreamt I could have any objection to his defign; consequently, gave himself no trouble in confulting my approbation. But this resolution was foon dropt, at the advice of our usher, who affured Mr. Bowling, it would be a thousand pities to baulk my genius, which would certainly, one day, make my fortune on shore, provided it received due cultivation. - Upon which, this generous tar determined (though he could ill afford it) to give me univerfity education; and accordingly fettled my board and other expences, at a town not many miles diffant, famous for its colleges, whither we repaired in a short time. - But before the day of our departure, the school-master, who no longer had the fear of my grandfather before his eyes, laid afide all decency and restraint, and not only abused me in the groffest language his rancour could fuggest, as a wicked, profigate, dull, beggarly miscreant, whom he had taught out of charity; but also inveighed in the most bitter manner against the memory of the judge (who by the bye had procured that fettlement for him) hinting, in pretty plain terms, that the old gentleman's foul was damn'd to all eternity, for his injustice in neglecting to pay for my learning.-This brutal behaviour, added to the sufferings I had formerly undergone, made me think it high time to be revenged of this infolent pedagogue. Having confulted my adherents, I found them all flaunch in their promifes to fland by me; and our scheme was this :- In the afternoon preceding the day of my departure for the university, I was to take the advantage of the usher's going out to make water (which he regularly did at four o'clock) and shut the great door, that he might not come to the affiftance of his superior. This being done, the affault was to be begun, by my advancing to my master and spitting in his face. I was to be seconded by two of the strongest boys in the school, who were devoted to me; their bufiness was to join me in dragging the tyrant to a bench, over which he was to be laid, and his bare posteriors heartily slogged with his own birch, which we proposed to wrest from him in the struggle; but if we should find him too many for us all three, we were to demand the affiftance of our competitors, who should be ready to reinforce us, or oppose any thing that might be undertaken for the master's relief. One of my principal affistants was called Jeremy Gawky, fon and heir of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood; and the name of the other Hugh Strap, the cadet of a family which had given Thoemakers to the village time out of mind .--- I had once faved Gawky's life by plunging into a river and dragging him on shore, when he was on the point of being drowned .- - I had often rescued him from the clutches of those whom his infufferable arrogance had provoked, to a refentment he was not able to fustain; --- and many times faved his reputation and posteriors, by performing his exercises at school; so that it is not to be wondered at, if he had a particular regard for me and my interests. The attachment of Strap, flowed from a voluntary, disinterested inclination, which had manifested itself on many occasions in my behalf, having once rendered me the fame fervice that I had done Gawky, by faving my life at the risk of his own; and often fathered offences that I had committed, for which he suffered severely, rather than I should feel the weight of the punishment I deferved .-- These two champions were the more willing to engage in this enterprize, because they intended to leave the school next day, as well as I; the first being ordered by his father to return into the country, and the other being bound apprentice to a barber, at a market town not far off.

66

66

an

OV

ar

bo

of

66

T

the

and

Wil

me

OR

thi

upo

nis

00

In the mean time, my uncle being informed of my master's behaviour to me, was enraged at his insolence, and vowed revenge so heartily, that I could not refrain telling him the scheme I had concerted, which he heard

heard with great fatisfaction, at every fentence fquirting out a mouthful of spittle, tinctured with tobacco. of which he constantly chew'd a large quid --- At last, pulling up his breeches, he cried, "No, no, Z---ds! " that won't do neither, ---- howsomever, 'tis a bold " undertaking, my lad, --- that I must say, i' faith! " --- but lookee, lookee, how dost propose to get " clear off?---won't the enemy give chace, my boy? " --- ay, ay, that he will, I warrant, --- and alarm the " whole coast, --- ah! God help thee, more fail than " ballast, Rory .-- Let me alone for that --- leave the " whole to me---I'll shew him the fore-top-fail, I " will .-- If so be your ship-mates are jolly boys and " won't flinch, you shall see, you shall see; egad, "I'll play him a falt water trick--I'll bring him to " the gang-way, and anoint him with a cat and nine " tails, he shall have a round dozen doubled, my lad, " he shall--- and be left lashed, to his meditations." ---We were very proud of our affociate, who immediately went to work, and prepared the instrument of his revenge with great skill and expedition; after which he ordered our baggage to be packed up and fent off, a day before our attempt, and got horses ready to be mounted, as foon as the affair should be At length the hour arrived, when our auxiliary, feizing the opportunity of the usher's absence, bolted in, secured the door, and immediately laid hold of the pedant by his collar, who bauled out " Mur-" der! Thieves !"--with the voice of a Stentor. Though I trembled all over like an afpen-leaf, I knew there was no time to be loft, and accordingly got up, and fummoned our affociates to my affiftance.---Strap without any hesitation obeyed the signal, and seeing me leap upon the mafter's back, ran immediately to one of his legs, which pulling with all his force, this dreadful adversary was humbled to the ground: upon which Gawky, who had hitherto remained in his place, under the influence of an universal trepidation.

r

S

e

I

er

e-

ıg

ed

rst

y,

at

ny

ce,

ain

he

ard

tion, hastened to the scene of action, and insulted the fallen tyrant, with a loud huzza, in which the whole school joined.—This noise alarmed the usher. who finding himself shut out, endeavoured, partly by threats, and partly by intreaties, to procure admission. -My uncle bade him have a little patience, and he would let him in prefently; but if he pretended to move from that place, it should fare the worse with this fon of a b-ch his fuperior, on whom he intended only to bestow a little wholesome chastisement, for his barbarous usage of Rory, "to which (said he) you are no stranger."- By this time we had dragged the criminal to a post, to which Bowling tied him with a rope he had provided on purpose, after having fecured his hands and stript his back. - In this ludicrous posture he stood (to the no small entertainment of the boys, who crouded about him, and shouted with great exultation at the novelty of the fight) venting bitter imprecations against the lieutenant, and reproaching his scholars with treachery and rebellion; when the usher was admitted, whom my uncle accosted in this manner: "Harkee, Mr. Syntax, I believe " you are an honest man, d'ye see-and I have a " respect for you-but for all that, we must for our own fecurity (d'ye fee) belay you for a short "time."-With these words, he pulled out some fathoms of cord, which the honest man no sooner faw, than he protested with great earnestness, he would allow no violence to be offered to him, at the fame time accusing me of perfidy and ingratitude. But Bowling representing, that it was in vain to refift, and that he did not mean to use him with violence and indecency; but only to hinder him from raifing the hue and cry against us, before we should be out of their power; he allowed himself to be bound to his own desk, where he sat a spectator of the punishment inflicted on his principal. My uncle having upbraided this arbitrary wretch with his inhumanity

So

do

wh

by:

to.

lay

fho

com

bein

had

the n

to me, told him, that he proposed to give him a little discipline for the good of his foul, which he immediately put in practice, with great vigour and dexterity. This fmart application to the pedant's withered posteriors, gave him fuch exquisite pain, that he roared like a mad bull, danced, curfed, and blasphemed, like a frantic bedlamite. When the lieutenant thought himself sufficiently revenged, he took his leave of him in these words, " Now, friend, " you'll remember me the longest day you have to " live-I have given you a leffon, that will let you "know what flogging is, and teach you to have " more lympathy for the future—shout, boys, shout." -This ceremony was no fooner over, than my uncle proposed they should quit the school, and convoy their old comrade Rory to a public house, about a mile from the village, where he would treat them all.-His offer being joyfully embraced, he addreffed himself to Mr. Syntax, and begged him to accompany us, but this he refused with great disdain, telling my benefactor, he was not the man he took him to be .- " Well, well, old furly, (replied my uncle, " shaking his hand) thou art an honest fellow not-" withstanding; and if ever I have the command " of a fhip, thou shalt be our schoolmaster, i'faith." So faying, he difmiffed the boys, and locking the door, left the two preceptors to confole one another; while we moved forwards on our journey, attended by a numerous retinue, whom he treated according to his promise. - We parted with many tears, and lay that night at an inn on the road, about ten miles fhort of the town where I was to remain, at which we arrived next day, and I found I had no cause to complain of the accommodations provided for me; being boarded at the house of an apothecary; who had married a diftant relation of my mother. In a few days after, my uncle fet out for his thip, having fettled the necessary funds for my maintenance and education. Vol. I. CHAP.

d

1

ve

a

ur

me

ner he

the

ide.

fift,

nce

fing

out

d to

ith-

ving

nity

to

CHAP. VI.

I make great progress in my studies—am careffed by every body—my female cousins take notice of me—I reject their invitation—they are incensed and conspire against me—I am left destitute by a missortune that befals my uncle—Gawky's treachery—my revenge.

A S I was now capable of reflection, I began to confider my precarious fituation; that I was utterly abandoned by those whose duty it was to protect me; and that my fole dependance was on the generofity of one man, who was not only exposed by his profession to continual dangers, which might one day deprive me of him for ever; but also (no doubt) subject to those viciffitudes of disposition, which a change of fortune usually creates; or, which a better acquaintance with the world might produce: for I always ascribed his benevolence to the dictates of a heart as yet undebauched by a commerce with mankind. - Alarmed at these considerations, I refolved to apply myself with great care to my studies, and enjoy the opportunity in my power: This I did with fuch fuccefs, that in the space of three years, I understood Greek very well, was pretty far advanced in the mathematics, and no stranger to moral and natural philosophy: logic I made no account of; but above all things, I valued myself on my taste in the Belle Lettre, and a talent for poetry, which had already produced fome morceaus, that met with a very favourable reception. These qualifications added to a good face and shape, acquired the effeem and acquaintance of the most consider-

pr

bu

gyi

eve

of t

legia

Was

happ

fition

they

repro

their

able people in town, and I had the satisfaction to find myfelf in some degree of favour with the ladies ; an intoxicating piece of good fortune, to one of my amorous complexion! which I obtained, or at least preferved, by gratifying their propenfity to scandal, in lampooning their rivals. - Two of my female cousins lived in this place, with their mother, after the death of their father, who left his whole fortune equally divided between them; fo that if they were not the most beautiful, they were at least the richest toasts in town; and received daily the addresses of all the beaux and cavaliers of the country. - Although I had hitherto been looked upon by them with the most supercilious contempt, my character now attracted their notice fo much, that I was given to understand, I might be honoured with their acquaintance, if I pleafed.—The reader will easily perceive, that this condescension either flowed from the hope of making my poetical capacity subservient to their malice, or at least of screening themselves from the lash of my resentment, which they had effectually provoked. - I enjoyed this triumph with great fatiffaction; and not only rejected their offer with difdain. but in all my performances, whether fatire or panegyric, industriously avoided mentioning their names, even while I celebrated those of their intimates: this mortified their pride exceedingly, and incenfed them to fuch a degree, that they were refolved to make me repent of my indifference. - The first stroke of their revenge confifted in their hiring a poor collegian to write verses against me, the subject of which was my own poverty, and the catastrophe of my unhappy parents; but besides the badness of the compofition (of which they themselves were ashamed) they did not find their account in endeavouring to reproach me with those misfortunes, which they and their relations had brought upon me; and which confequently,

h

-

S,

id

rs,

d-

10-

int

my

ry,

hat

ua-

red

lerable fequently, reflected much more dishonour on themfelves, than on me, who was the innocent victim of their barbarity and avarice.-Finding this plan mifcarry, they found means to irritate a young gentleman against me, by telling him I had lampooned his mistres; and so effectually succeeded in the quality of incendiaries, that this enraged lover determined to feize me next night, as I returned to my lodgings from a friend's house that I frequented: with this view, he waited in the street, attended by two of his companions, to whom he had imparted his defign of carrying me down to the river, in which he proposed to have me heartily ducked, notwithstanding the severity of the weather, it being then about the middle of December. - But this stratagem did not succeed; for, being apprifed of their ambush, I got home another way, and by the help of my landlord's apprentice, discharged a volley from the garret window, which did great execution upon them, and next day, occasioned so much mirth at their expence, that they found themselves under a necessity of leaving the town, until the adventure should be entirely forgotten .- My cousins (though twice baffled in their expectation) did not however, defift from perfecuting me, who had now enraged them beyond a possibility of forgiveness, by detecting their malice, and preventing its effects: neither should I have found them more humane, had I patiently submitted to their rancour, and bore without murmuring the rigour of their unreasonable hate; for, I have found by experience, that though fmall favours may be acknowledged, and flight injuries attoned, there is no wretch so ungrateful as he, whom you have most generously obliged; and no enemy fo implacable, as those who have done you most wrong.-These good-natured creatures, therefore, had recourse to a scheme which conspired with a piece of bad news I soon after received; to give them all the fatisfaction they defired:

this

W

fy]

this plan was to debauch the faith of my companion and confident, who betrayed the trust I reposed in him, by imparting to them the particulars of my fmall amours, which they published with such exaggerations, that I fuffered very much in the opinion of every body, and was utterly discarded, by the dear creatures whose names had been called in question. -While I was bufy in tracing out the author of this treachery, that I might not only be revenged on him, but also vindicate my character to my friends, I one day perceived the looks of my landlady much altered when I went home to dinner, and enquiring into the cause, she screwed up her mouth, and fixing her eyes on the ground, told me her husband had received a letter from Mr. Bowling, with one inclosed for me - the was very forry for what had happened, both for my fake, and his own-People should be more cautious of their conduct.— she was always afraid his brutal behaviour would bring him into some misfortune or other. - As for her part she should be very ready to befriend me; but she had a small family of her own to maintain. - The world would do nothing for her if the should come to want—charity begins at home. She wished I had been bound to some substantial handicraft, fuch as a weaver or a shoemaker, rather than loiter away my time in learning foolish nonsense that would never bring me in a penny-but some folks are wife, and some are otherwise.—I was listening to this mysterious discourse, with great amazement, when her husband entered, and without speaking a fyllable, put both the letters into my hand.—I received them trembling, and read what follows:

y

e

t-

ir

ıg

ty

e-

em

ın-

of

pe-

-wc

etch

who ured

hich

re-

red:

this

To Mr. ROGER POTION.

"THIS is to let you know that I have quitted the Thunder man of war; being obliged to C 3 " sheer

" fheer off, for killing my captain, which I did fairly on the beach, at cape Tiberoon, in the island of "Hispaniola; having received his fire and returned it, which went through his body: - and I would " ferve the best man so that ever stept between stem and stern, if so be, that he struck me, as captain " Oakhum did. I am (thank God) fafe among the " French, who are very civil, thof I don't understand their lingo, - and I hope to be restored in a little " time, for all the great friends and parliamentary interest of the captain, for I have sent over to my " landlord in Deal, an account of the whole affair, " with our bearings and distances while we were en-" gaged, whereby I have defired him to lay it before " his majesty, who (God bless him) will not suffer an honest tar to be wronged.—My love to your " spouse, and am

Your loving friend, and servant to command Thomas Bowling. test to sufficient and

To Roderick Random.

Dear Roky, look that had a selected the DON'T be grieved at my misfortune—but mind your book, my lad. I have got no " money to fend you; but what of that ?- Mr. Potion will take care of you, for the love he bears to me; and let you want for nothing, and it shall go hard, " but I will fee him one day repaid. - No more at er present, but rests

Your dutiful uncle and servant, till death,

252 1 14 7

Thomas Bowling.

This

fr

th fer

hi

fix

ad

I i

W of

IN eei

This letter (which with the other was dated from Port Louis in Hispaniola) was no sooner read, than the apothecary shaking his head, began :-- " I " have a very great regard for Mr. Bowling, that's " certain, - and could be well content - but times are wery hard. - There's no fuch thing as money to " be got-I believe 'tis all vanished under-ground, " for my part.—Besides, I have been out of pocket " already, having entertained you fince the begin-" ning of this month, without receiving a fix-pence, " - and God knows if ever I shall; - for I believe " it will go hard with your uncle. - And more than that, I was thinking of giving you warning, for "I want your apartment for a new 'prentice, whom "I expect from the country every hour. - So, I de-" fire you will this week provide yourfelf with a-" nother lodging." - The indignation which this harangue inspired, gave me spirits to support my reverse of fortune; and to tell him, I despised his mean. felfish disposition so much, that I would rather starve than be beholden to him for one fingle meal. Upon which, out of my pocket-money, I paid him to the last farthing of what I owed, and assured him, I would not fleep another night under his roof. This faid, I fallied out in a transport of rage and forrow, without knowing whither to fly for shelter, having not one friend in the world capable of relieving me, and only three shillings in my purse. After giving way for a few minutes to the dictates of my rage, I went and hired a small bed room at the rate of one shilling and fix-pence per week, which I was obliged to pay peradvance, before the landlord would receive me: hither I removed my luggage; and next morning got up, with a view of craving the advice and affiftance of a person who had on all occasions loaded me with careffes, and made frequent offers of friendship, while I was under no necessity of accepting them. He received me with his wonted affability, and infifted on

C 4

is

my

Will !

my breakfasting with him, which I did not think fit to refuse. But when I communicated the occasion of my visit, he appeared so disconcerted, that I concluded him wonderfully affected with the mifery of my condition, and looked upon him as a man of the most extentive sympathy and benevolence. He did not leave me long under this mistake; for recovering himself out of his confusion, he told me, he was grieved at my misfortune, and defired to know what had passed between my landlord Mr. Potion and me. Whereupon I recounted the conversation; and when I repeated the answer I made to his ungenerous remonftrance with regard to my leaving his house, this pretended friend affected a stare, and exclaimed, "Is it possible you could behave fo ill to the man who had treated " you so kindly all along? - My surprise at hearing this, was not at all affected, whatever his might be; and I gave him to understand, with some warmth, that I did not imagine he would fo unreasonably espouse the cause of a scoundrel, who ought to be expelled from every focial community. This heat of mine, gave him all the advantage he defired over me, and our discourse (after much altercation) concluded in his defiring never to fee me again in that place; to which I yielded my confent, affuring him, that had I been as well acquainted with his principles formerly as I was now, he never should have had an opportunity of making that request. - And thus we parted.

On my return, I met my comrade Squire Gawky. whom his father had fent, fome time ago, to town, for his improvement in writing, dancing, fencing, and other modifi qualifications. As I had lived with him, fince his arrival, on the footing of our old intimacy, I made no scruple of informing him of the lowness of my circumstances, and asking a small supply of money, to answer my present expence; upon which he pulled out a handful of half-pence, with a no believe has willed he become and drive are shilling

shilling or two among them, and swore that was all he had to keep his pocket till next quarter-day; having loft the greatest part of his allowance the night before at billiards. Though this might very well be true, I was extremely mortified at his indifference; for he neither express'd any sympathy for my mishap, nor defire of alleviating my diffres; and accordingly, I left him without uttering one word: But when I afterwards understood, that he was the person who had formerly betrayed me to the malice of my coufins, to whom likewise he had carried the tidings of my forlorn fituation, which afforded them great matter of triumph and exultation, I determined with myself to call him to a fevere account; for which purpose, I borrowed a fword, and wrote a challenge, defiring him to meet me at a certain time and place, that I might have an opportunity of punishing his perfidy, at the expence of his blood. He accepted the invitation, and I betook myself to the field, though not without feeling confiderable repugnance to the combat, which frequently attacked me in cold sweats by the way; -but the defire of revenge, the shame of retracting, and hope of conquest, conspired to repel these unmanly symptoms of fear; and I appeared on the plain with a good grace: there I waited an hour beyond the time appointed, and was not ill please to find he had no mind to meet me; because I should have an opportunity of exposing his cowardice, dirplaying my own courage, and of beating him foundly wherefoever I should find him, without any dread of the confequence. - Elevated with these suggestions. which entirely banished all thoughts of my deplorable condition, I went directly to Gawky's lodgings, where I was informed of his precipitate retreat, he having fet out for the country in less than an hour after he had received my billet. Whereupon, I was vain enough to have the whole story inferted in the news. although I was fain to fell a gold-laced hat to my landlord.

landlord, for less than half-price, to defray the expence, and contribute to my subsistence.

CHAP. VII.

I am entertained by Mr. Crab—a description of him—I acquire the art of surgery—consult Crab's disposition—become necessary to him—an accident happens—he advises me to launch out into the world—assists me with money—I set out for London.

HE fumes of my refentment being difficated, as well as the vanity of my fuccess, I found myfelf deferted to all the horrors of extreme want, and avoided by mankind as a creature of a different species, or rather as a solitary being, no ways comprehended within the scheme or protection of providence. My despair had rendered me almost quite flupified, when I was one day told, that a gentleman defired to fee me, at a certain public house, whither immediately I repaired; and was introduced to one Mr. Launcelot Crab a furgeon in town, who was engaged with two more, in drinking a liquor called pop-in, composed by mixing a quartern of brandy with a quart of small beer. Before I relate the occasion of this message, I believe it will not be disagreeable to the reader, if I describe the gentleman who fent for me, and mention some circumstances of his character and conduct, which may illustrate what follows, and account for his behaviour to me,

This member of the faculty was aged fifty, about five feet high, and ten round the belly; his face was capacious as a full moon, and much of the complexion of a mulberry: his nofe resembling a powder-

horn,

horn, was fwelled to an enormous fize, and fludded all over with carbuncles! and his little grey eyes reflected the rays in fuch an oblique manner, that while he looked a person full in the face, one would have imagined he was admiring the buckle of his shoe. -He had long entertained an implacable refentment against Potion, who, tho' a younger practitioner, had engrofied more bufiness than he, and once had the affurance to perform a cure, whereby he disappointed and difgraced the prognostic of the faid Crab. - This quarrel, which was at one time upon the point of being made up, by the interpolition and mediation of friends, had been lately inflamed beyond a possibility of reconciliation by the respective wives of the opponents, who, chancing to meet at a christening, difagreed about precedence, proceeded from invectives to blows, and were with great difficulty, by the goffips, prevented from converting the occasion of joy, into a scene of lamentation.

The difference between these rivals was in the height of rancour, when I was fent for by Crab, who received me as civilly as I could have expected from one of his disposition; and after desiring me to sit, enquired into the particulars of my leaving the house of Potion; which when I had related, he faid with a malicious grin, - "Here's a fneaking dog! - I al-" ways thought him a fellow without a foul, d-n " me! - a canting scoundrel, who has crept into " business by his hypocrify, and kissing the a-fe of "every body." -- "Ay, ay, (fays another) one " might fee with half an eye, that the rafcal has no " honesty in him, by his going so regularly to "church." This fentence was confirmed by the third, who affured his companions, that Potion was never known to be difguifed in liquor but once, at a meeting of the godly, where he had diffinguished himself by an extempore prayer an hour long.-After this preamble, Crab addressed himself to me in these

words, "Well, my lad, I have heard a good cha-" racter of you, and I'll do for you. - You may fend your things to my house when you please. " I have given orders for your reception. " Z-ds! what does the booby stare at? - If you have no mind to embrace my courteous offer, you " may let it alone and be d-n'd." -- I answered with a fubmissive bow, that I was far from rejecting his friendly offer, which I would immediately accept, as foon as he should inform me, on what footing I was to be entertained.-" What footing (d-n my " blood, cried he) d'ye expect to have a footman " and couple of horses kept for you?"-No, Sir (I replied) my expectations are not quite fo fanguine. That I may be as little burthensome as possible, I would willingly ferve in your fhop, by which means I may fave you the expence of a journey-man, or porter at least, for I understand a little pharmacy, having employed some of my leisure hours in the practice of that art, while I lived with Mr. Potion: neither am I altogether ignorant of furgery, which I have studied with great pleasure and application.-"O ho! you did? (fays Crab.) Gentlemen, here is a compleat artist! —— Studied surgery! what? in books I suppose.—I shall have you disputing with me, one of these days, on points of my pro-46 feffion.—You can already account for mufcular motion (I warrant) and explain the mystery of the " brain and nerves - ha !- You are too learned for me, d-n me.-But let's hear no more of this " ftuff, -- can you bleed and give a clyfter, fpread " a plaister and prepare a potion?" - Upon my an-Twering him in the affirmative, he shook his head, telling me, he believed he should have little good of me, for all my promises; -- but however, he would take me in for the fake of charity. -I was accordingly that very night admitted to his house, and had an apartment affigned to me in the garret, which I was

fain to put up with, notwithstanding the mortification my pride fuffered in this change of circumstances. I was foon convinced of the real motives which induced Crab to receive me in this manner: for befides the gratification of his revenge, in exposing the felfishness of his antagonist, in opposition to his own generofity, which was all affectation, he had occasion for a young man who understood fomething of the profession, to fill up the place of his eldest apprentice, lately dead, not without violent suspicion of foul play from his mafter's brutality. - The knowledge of this, together with his daily behaviour to his wife, and the young apprentice, did not at all con ribute to my enjoying my new fituation with eafe; however, as I did not perceive how I could bestow myself to better advantage, I resolved to study Crab's temper with all the application, and manage it with all the address in my power. - And it was not long before I found out a strange peculiarity of humour, which governed his behaviour towards all his dependents. - I observed when he was pleafed, he was fuch a niggard of his fatisfaction, that if his wife or fervants betrayed the least symptom of participation, he was offended to an insupportable degree of choler and fury, the effects of which they feldom failed to feel .- And when his indignation was roufed, fubmiffion and foothing always exasperated it beyond the bounds of reason and humanity.- I therefore purfued a contrary plan; and one day, when he honoured me with the names of ignorant whelp and lazy ragamuffin-I boldly replied, I was neither ignorant nor lazy, fince I both understood, and performed my business as well as he could do for his foul; neither was it just to call me ragamuffin, for I had a whole coat on my back, and was descended from a better family than any he could boast an alliance with. He gave tokens of great amazement at this affurance of mine, and shook his cane over my head, regarding me all the time with

d

a countenance truly diabolical. Although I was terribly startled at his menacing looks and posture, I vet had reflection enough left, to convince me. I had gone too far to retract, and that this was the critical minute which must decide my future lot, in his service : whereupon I fnatched up the peftle of a mortar, and fwore if he offered to firike me without a cause, I should see whether his scull or my weapon was hardeft.-He continued filent for fome time, and at last broke forth into these ejaculations - "This is fine " usage from a servant to a master,—very fine!— " damnation! -- but, no matter, you shall pay for sthis you dog, you shall. - I'll do your businessyes, yes, I'll teach you to lift your hand against "me."-So faying, he retired and left me under dreadful apprehenfions, which vanished entirely at our next meeting, when he behaved with unufual complacency, and treated me with a glass of punch after dinner. - By this conduct, I got the afcendancy over him in a short time, and became so necessary to him, in managing his business while he was engaged at the bottle, that fortune began to wear a kinder afpect; and I consoled myself for the disregard of my former acquaintance, with the knowledge I daily imbibed, by a close application to the duties of my employment, in which I fucceeded beyond my own expectation.- I was on very good terms with my mafter's wife, whose esteem I acquired and cultivated, by representing Mrs. Potion in the most ridiculous lights my fatirical talents could invent, as well as by rendering her some christian offices, when she had been too familiar with the dram bottle, to which she had oftentimes recourse for confolation, under the affliction the fuffered from a barbarous husband. - In this manner I lived, without hearing the least tidings of my uncle, for the space of two years, during which time I kept little or no company, being neither in a humour to relish, nor in a capacity to maintain much acquain

fir

in

in

me

cid

hin

nar

to 1

OCC

the

the

acquaintance: for the Nabal my mafter allowed me no wages; and the small perquisites of my station fcarce supplied me with the common necessaries of life. - I was no longer a pert, unthinking coxcomb, giddy with popular applause, and elevated with the extravagance of hope; my misfortunes had taught me how little the careffes of the world during a man's prosperity, are to be valued by him; and how serioufly and expeditiously he ought to fet about making himself independent of them. My present appearance, therefore, was the least of my care, which was wholly engroffed in laying up a flock of instruction that might secure me against the caprice of fortune for the future. I became fuch a floven, and contracted such an air of austerity, that every body pronounced me crest-fallen; and Gawky returned to town without running any risque from my resentment, which was by this time pretty much cooled. and restrained by prudential reasons, so effectually, that I never fo much as thought of obtaining fatiffaction for the injuries he had done me. - When I deemed myfelf fufficiently master of my business, I began to cast about for an opportunity of launching into the world, in hopes of finding some provision, that might make amends for the difficulties I had undergone: but, as this could not be effected without a small sum of money to equip me for the field, I was in the utmost perplexity how to raise it, well know. ing, that Crab, for his own fake, would never put me in a condition to leave him, when his interest was fo much concerned in my flay. - But a small accident, which happened about this time, determined him in my favour. - This was no other than the pregnancy of his maid fervant, who declared her fituation to me, affuring me at the same time, that I was the occasion of it. Although I had no reason to question the truth of this imputation, I was not ignorant of the familiarities which had passed between her master and

1-

K-

do

us

by

ad

he

the

-In

ngs

iich

in a

uch

and her; taking the advantage of which, I represented to her the folly of laying the burthen at my door, when she might dispose of it to much better purpose with Mr. Crab: She listened to my advice, and next day acquainted him with the pretended fuccess of their mutual endeavours.—He was far from being overjoyed at this proof of his vigour, which he forefaw might have very troublesome confequences; not that he dreaded any domestic grumblings and reproaches from his wife, whom he kept in perfect subjection; but because he knew it would furnish his rival Potion with a handle for infulting and undermining his reputation, there being no scandal equal to that of uncleanness, in the opinion of those who inhabit the part of the island where he lived .- He therefore took a refolution worthy of himself, which was, to persuade the girl, that she was not with child, but only afflicted with a diforder incident to young women, which he could easily remove: with this view (as he pretended) he prescribed for her such medicines, as he thought would infallibly procure abortion; but in this he was disappointed, for the maid being advertifed by me of his defign, and at the same time, well acquainted with her own condition, absolutely refused to follow his directions; and threatned to publish her fituation to the world, if he did not immediately take fome method of providing for the important occafion, which she expected in a few months. It was not long before I gueffed the refult of his deliberation, by his addreffing himfelf to me (one day) in this manner: "I am furprised, that a young fellow like you, discovers no inclination to push his fortune in the world.—Before I was of your age, I was broiling " on the coast of Guinea. - Damme! what's to hinder you from profiting by the war, which will certainly be declared in a fhort time against Spain? -You may eafily get on board of a king's ship in " quality of furgeon's mate, where you will certainly ss fee

p

P

th

" fee a great deal of practice, and stand a good chance " of getting prize-money."-I laid hold of this declaration, which I had long wished for, and affured ' him I would follow his advice with pleasure, if it was in my power; but that it was impossible for me, to embrace an opportunity of that kind, having no friend to advance a little money, to fupply me with what necessaries I should want, and defray the expences of my journey to London. He told me, that few necessaries were required; and as for the expence of my journey, he would lend me money, fufficient not only for that purpose, but also to maintain me comfortably in London, until I should procure a warrant for my provision aboard ship.—I gave him a thousand thanks for his obliging offer (altho' I was very well apprized of his motive, which was to make his chamber-maid lay the child to me after I was gone) and accordingly fet out in a few weeks for London; my whole fortune confishing of one fuit of cloaths, half a dozen of ruffled thirts, as many plain, two pair of worsted stockings, as many thread; a case of pocket infiruments, a small edition of Horace, Wifeman's furgery, and ten guineas in cash; for which Crab took my bond, bearing 5 per cent. interest; at: the fame time giving me a letter to the member of parliament for our town, which he faid would do my bufinefs. deray in 5 and a second side of the part of the carry at

the manifest of a school bas to be depended

salkan seda desar di sellar Perhandanan in shuru gu

analysiss of thister running a court schion of paid

Chellenge and services and terrorist should wanted

on the Million and the contract of the second and the

(sithaunitries) when the engine on the total his

A talkation procedures has "A Sent Stock to promote in the

n

d

h

ly

a-

25

n,

n-

u,

he

ng

to

vill

n?

in

fee

and the engineer bridge of the CHAP.

000000000000000000000000000

CHAP. VIII.

I arrive at Newcastle—meet with my old schoolfellow Strap—we determine to walk in
company to London—set out on our journey—
put up at a solitary ale-house—are disturbed
by a strange adventure in the night.

THERE is no such convenience as a waggon in this country, and my finances were too weak to support the expence of hiring a horse; I determined therefore to set out with the carriers, who transport goods from one place to another on horse-back; and this I accordingly put in execution, on the first day of November 1739, fitting upon a pack-saddle between two baskets; one of which contained my goods in a knapsack. But by the time we arrived at Newcastle upon Tyne, I was so satigued with the tediousness of the carriage, and benumbed with the coldness of the weather, that I resolved to travel the rest of my journey on foot, rather than proceed in such a disagreeable manner.

f

W

h

(1

d

0

Te

n

b

th

ag

in

er

te

D

than

The hoftler of the inn at which we put up, understanding I was bound for London, advised me to take my passage in a collier, which would be both cheap and expeditious, and withal much easier than to walk upwards of three hundred miles through deep roads, in the winter time; a journey which he believed I had not strength enough to perform.—I was almost persuaded to take his advice, when, one day, stepping into a barber's shop to be shaved, the young man, while he lathered my face, accosted me thus: "Sir, I presume you are a Scotchman." To which I answered in the affirmative.—"Pray (continued he) "of what part of Scotland?"—I no sooner told him,

my

than he discovered great emotion, and not confining his operation to my chin and upper-lip, befmeared my whole face with great agitation. At which I was so offended, that starting up, I asked him what the d-1 he meant by using me so? - He begged pardon, telling me his joy at meeting with a countryman had occasioned some confusion in him: and craved my name. - But when I declared my name was Random, he exclaimed in a rapture, "How! Rory " Random?" The fame, I replied, looking at him with aftonishment; "What, cried he, don't you " know your old school-fellow, Hugh Strap?" At that instant recollecting his face, I flew into his arms, and in the transport of my joy, gave him back one half of the fuds he had fo lavishly bestowed on my countenance; fo that we made a very ludicrous appearance, and furnished a great deal of mirth for his master and shop-mates, who were witnesses of this scene. - When our mutual caresses were over, I fat down again to be shaved, but the poor fellow's nerves were fo discomposed by this unexpected meeting, that his hand could fcarcely hold the razor, with which (nevertheless) he found means to cut me in three places, in as many strokes. His master, perceiving his disorder, bade another supply his place, and after the operation was performed, gave Strap leave to pass the rest of the day with me-We retired immediately to my lodgings, where calling for some beer, I defired to be informed of his adventures, which contained nothing more, than that his mafter dying before his time was out, he had come to Newcastle about a year ago, in expectation of journey-work, along with three young fellows of his acquaintance who worked in the keels; that he had the good fortune of being employed by a very civil mafter, with whom he intended to fray till the spring, at which time he propofed to go to London, where he did not doubt of finding encouragement. - When I communicated to him

n

k

i-(-

.;

rst

ny

at

ehe

he

er-

ke

eap

alk

ds,

dI

oft

ep-

ung

us:

ch I

he)

im, han

f

u

n

n

n

W

n

p

n

ta

b

1

**

66

P

C

to

my fituation and defign, he did not approve of my taking a passage by sea, by reason of the danger of a winter voyage, which is very hazardous along that coast, as well as the precariousness of the wind, which might possibly detain me a great while, to the no fmall detriment of my fortune: whereas, if I would venture by land, he would bear me company, carry my baggage all the way; and if we should be fatigued before we could perform the journey, it would be no hard matter for us to find on the road, either returnhorses or waggons, of which we might take the opportunity for a very trifling expence. - I was fo ravished at this proposal, that I embraced him affectionately, and affured him he might command my purse to the last farthing; but he gave me to underfland, he had faved money fufficient to answer his own occasions; and that he had a friend in London, who would foon introduce him into bufiness, in that capital; and might possibly have it in his power to ferve me alfo.

Having concerted the plan and fettled our affairs that night, we departed next morning by day-break, armed with a good cudgel each (my companion being charged with the furniture of us both, crammed into one knapfack;) and our money fewed between the lining and wastband of our breeches, except some loofe filver for our immediate expence on the road. -We travelled all day at a round pace, but being ignorant of the proper stages, were benighted at a good distance from any inn, which compelled us to take up our lodging at a small hedge ale-house, that stood on a bye-road, about half a mile from the high-way: There we found a pedlar of our own country, in whose company we regaled ourselves with bacon and eggs, and a glass of good ale, before a comfortable fire, converfing all the while very fociably with the landlord and his daughter, an hale buxome lass, who entertained us with great good humour, and in whole affection

h

0

d

d

10

1-

)-

a-

i-

ly

r-

nis .

n,

nat

to

irs

ak,

ng

nto

the

me

no-

boo

ake

ood

ay:

In.

and

fire,

and-

en-

hole

tion

affection I was vain enough to believe I had made fome progress. About eight a clock, we were all three, at our own defire, shewn into an apartment, where were two beds, in one of which Strap and I betook ourselves to rest, and the pediar occupied the other, though not before he had prayed a confiderable time extempore; fearched into every corner of the room, and fastned the door on the inside with a strong iron screw, which he carried about with him for that use. -Islept very found till midnight, when I was disturbed by a violent motion of the bed, which shook under me with a continual tremour. - Alarmed at this phoenomenon, I jogged my companion, whom, to my no small amazement, I found drenched in sweat, and quaking through every limb; he told me with a low faultering voice, that we were undone; for there was a bloody highwayman loaded with piftols in the next room; then, bidding me make as little noise as possible, he directed me to a small chink in the board partition, through which I could fee a thick fet brawny fellow, with a fierce countenance, fitting at a table in company with our young landlady, having a bottle of ale and a brace of pistols before them. --I listned with great attention, and heard him fay in a terrible tone: " D-n that fon of a b-h, Smack "the coachman!——he has ferved me a fine trick, " indeed !---but d--tion feize me, if I don't make " him repent it !- I'll teach the scoundrel to give " intelligence to others, while he is under articles " with me," -- Our landlady endeavoured to appeafe this exasperated robber, by saying he might be mistaken in Smack, who perhaps kept no correspondence with the other gentleman that robbed his coach,—and that if an accident had disappointed him to-day, he might foon find opportunities enough to attone for his loft trouble. -- " I'll tell thee what, " my dear Bett (replied he) I never had, nor never " will, while my name is Rifle, have fuch a glorious booty

T

12

p

R

e

to

be

in

po

in

OI

pe

W

pı

th

po

fci

in

an

th

tie

fai

tle

ya

m

eteo:

booty as I missed to-day. - Z -ds! there was 400 !. in cash to recruit men for the king's service, befides the jewels, watches, fwords, and money be-" longing to the passengers; - had it been my fortune to have got clear off with fo much treasure. I would have purchased a commission in the army, and made you an officer's lady, you jade, would." -" Well, well, (cries Betty) we must trust to providence for that; - but did you find nothing worth taking, which escaped the other gentleman of the " road?" " Not much, faith (faid the lover;) I of gleaned a few things, - fuch as a pair of pops, " filver mounted, (here they are) I took them loaded " from the captain who had the charge of the money, together with a gold watch, which he had conceal-" ed in his breeches. - I likewise found ten Portugal " pieces in the shoes of a quaker, whom the spirit moved to revile me with great bitterness and devotion; but what I value myself mostly for, is this here urchafe, a gold fnuff-box, my girl, with a picture " on the infide of the lid: which I untied out of the " tail of a pretty lady's smock.".-Here, as the devil would have it, the pedlar snored so loud, that the highwayman fnatching his pistols, started up, crying, "Hell and d-n-n! I am betrayed, -who's that in the next room?" Mrs. Betty told him, he need not be uneasy, there were only three poor wearied travellers, who missing the road, had taken up their lodging there, and were afleep long ago.-"Travellers! fays he, spies, you b-ch! but no " matter-by G-d, I'll fend them all to hell in an " instant."—He accordingly ran towards our door; when his fweet-heart interpoling, affured him, there was only a couple of poor young Scotchmen, who were too raw and ignorant to give him the least cause of fuspicion; and the third was a presbyterian pedlar of the fame nation, who had often lodged in the house before .-- This declaration fatisfied the thief, who fwore h

e

s,

lal

rit

0-

re

he

le-

nat

ryo's

m,

oor

cen

no

an

or;

who

ause

dlar

ouse

wore he he was glad there was a pedlar, for he wanted fome linen.—Then in a jovial manner, he put about the glass, mingling his discourse to Betty, with caresses and familiarities, that spoke him very happy in his amours. During that part of the conversation which regarded us, Strap had crept under the bed, where he lay in the agonies of fear; fo that it was with great difficulty I persuaded him our danger was over, and prevailed on him to wake the pedlar, and inform him of what he had seen and heard. - This itinerant merchant no fooner felt fomebody shaking him by the shoulder, than he started up, calling as loud he could. -- "Thieves, thieves! Lord have mercy on us." Rifle, alarmed at this exclamation, jumped up, cocked one of his pistols, and turned towards the door, to kill the first man who should enter; for he verily believed himself beset; when his Dulcinea, after an immoderate fit of laughter, perfuaded him, that the poor pedlar dreaming of thieves, had only cried out in his fleep. - Mean-while my comrade had undeceived our fellow-lodger, and informed him of his reason for disturbing him; upon which, getting up fostly he peeped through the hole, and was fo terrified with what he faw, that falling down on his bare knees, he put up a long petition to heaven, to deliver him from the hands of that ruffian, and promifed never to defraud a customer for the future of the value of a pin's point, provided he might be refcued from the prefent danger.-Whether or not his disburthening his conscience afforded him any ease, I know not; but he slipt into bed again and lay very quiet until the robber and his mistress were asleep, which he understood by their fnoring in concert; then, rifing foftly, he untied a rope that was round his pack, and making it fast to one end of it, opened the window with as little noise as possible, and lowered his goods into the yard with great dexterity; which having done, he moved gently to our bed-fide, and bade as farewell, telling

telling us, that as we ran no risk, we might take our rest with great confidence, and in the morning affure the landlord that we knew nothing of his escape; then shaking us by the hands, and wishing us all manner of fuccess, he let himself drop from the window without any danger, the ground not being above a yard from his feet as he hung on the outlide. Although I did not think proper to accompany him in his flight, I was not at all free from apprehension, when I reflected on what might be the effects of the Highwayman's disappointment; for he certainly intended to make free with the pedlar's ware. Neither was my companion at more ease in his mind, but on the contrary fo possessed with the dreadful idea of Rifle, that he folicited me strongly to follow our countryman's example, and fo elude the fatal refentment of that terrible adventurer, who would certainly wreak his vengeance on us, as accomplices of the pedlar's elopement. - But I represented to him, the danger of giving Rifle cause to think we knew his profession, and put him in mind, that if ever he should meet us again on the road (which was far from being impossible) he would look upon us as dangerous acquaintance, and find it his interest to put us out of the way .- I told him withal my confidence in Betty's good-nature; in which he acquiefced, and during the remaining part of the night, we concerted a proper method of behaviour, to render us unfuspected in the morning.

It was no fooner day, than Betty, entering our chamber, and perceiving the window open, cried out, "Ods bobs! fure you Scotchmen must have "hot constitutions, to lie all night with the window open, in such cold weather."—I feigned to start out of sleep, and withdrawing the curtain, called, "What's the matter?" When she shewed me, I affected surprize, and said, "Bless me! the window "was shut when we went to bed."—" I'll be hanged,

faid

re

fo

in

ho

pe

VO

an

no

ou

on

fho

66

46

he

COL

fequ

end

to 1

who

gua

the

hear

Thi

Was

a co

a I

6 faid she, if Sawny Waddle the pedlar has not got " up in a dream and done it, for I heard him very ob-> " ftropulous in his fleep. - Sure I put a chamber-pot, "under his bed." - With these words she advanced. to the bed in which he lay, and finding the sheets cold, exclaimed, "Good lack a daify! the rogue is fled!" -" Fled (cried I, with feigned amazement) God "forbid!--Sure he has not robbed us."--Then springing up, I laid hold of my breeches, and emptied all my loofe money into my hand; which having reckoned, I faid, Heaven be praised our money is all fafe.—Strap, look to the knapfack.—He did fo, and foundall was right--Upon which we asked with seeming concern, if he had stole nothing belonging to the house.—" No, no, replied she, he has stole nothing " but his reckoning; " which, it feems, this pious pedlar had forgot to discharge in the midst of his devotion.—Betty, after a moment's paule, withdrew, and immediately we could hear her waken Rifle, who no sooner heard of Waddle's flight, than he jumped out of bed and dreffed, venting a thousand execrations, and vowing to murder the pedlar if ever he should set eyes on him again; " For, said he, the " scoundrel has by this time raised the hue and cry " against me."—Having dressed himself in a hurry, he mounted his horse, and for that time rid us of his company and a thousand fears that were the consequence of it. - While we were at breakfast, Betty endeavoured by all the cunning the was mistress of, to learn whether or no we suspected our fellow-lodger, whom we faw take horse; but as we were on our guard, we answered her fly questions with a simplicity the could not distrust; when all of a sudden, we heard the trampling of a horse's feet at the door. This noise alarmed Strap so much, whose imagination was wholly engroffed by the image of Rifle, that with a countenance as pale as milk, he cried out, " O "Lord! there's the highwayman returned!"—Our landlady VOL. I.

IT

th.

of

n,

he

m

ous of

y's

ing

ro-Red

our

nave

dow

frart

lled,

ne, 1

dow

rged,

faid

landlady staring at these words, said, "What high"wayman, young man?—Do you think any highwaymen harbour here?—Though I was very much
disconcerted at this piece of indiscretion in Strap, I
had presence of mind enough to tell her, we had met
a lorse-man the day before, whom Strap had soolishly
supposed to be a highwayman, because he rode with
pistols; and that he had been terrified at the sound
of a horse's feet ever since.——She forced a smile at
the ignorance and timorousness of my comrade;
but I could perceive, (not without great concern)
that this account was not at all satisfactory to her.



CHAP. IX.

We proceed on our journey—are overtaken by an bighwayman who fires at Strap, is prevented from shooting me by a company of horsemen, who ride in pursuit of him.—Strap is put to hed at an inn.—Adventures at that inn.

in fer

day

and

Cou

at w

Wit

66 O

time

coul

one

of m

inter

A FTER having paid our score, and taken leave of our hostes, who embraced me tenderly at parting, we proceeded on our journey, blessing ourselves that we had come off so well. We had not walked above sive miles, when we observed a man on horseback galloping after us, whom we in a short time recognized to be no other than this formidable hero who had already given us so much vexation.—He stopped hard by me, and asked if I knew who he was?—My assonishment had disconcerted me so much, that I did not hear his question, which he repeated with a volley of oaths and threats; but I remained as mute as before. Strap seeing my discomposure, fell upon his knees in the mud, uttering with a lamentable voice, these words: "For Ch——st's sake, have mercy

iued.

upon us, Mr. Rifle, we know you very well."-" O ho! cried the thief, you do !-but by G-d. or you never shall be evidence against me in this " world, you dog!"-So faying, he drew a piftol, and fired it at the unfortunate shaver, who fell flat upon the ground without speaking one word. - My comrade's fate, and my own fituation, rivetted me to the place where I flood, deprived of all fense and reflection; fo that Idid not make the least attempt either to run away, or deprecate the wrath of this barbarian. who fnapped a fecond piftol at me; but before he had time to prime again, perceived a company of horse-men coming up; whereupon he rode off, and left me standing motionless as a statue, in which posture I was found by those whose appearance had faved my life. This company, confifted of three men in livery, well armed, with an officer, who (as I afterwards learned) was the person from whom Risle had taken the pocket pistols the day before; and who, making known his misfortune to a nobleman he met on the road, affuring him, his non-refisfance was altogether owing to his confideration for the ladies in the coach, procured the affiftance of his Lordship's fervants to go in quest of the plunderer. This holiday captain scampered up to me with great address, and asked who fired the pistol which he had heard.-As I had not yet recovered my reason, he, before I could answer, observed a body lying on the ground : at which fight his colour changed, and he pronounced with a faultering tongue, "Gentlemen, here's murder " committed! Let us alight."-" No, no, faid one " of his followers, let us rather purfue the murderer. "-Which way went he, young man?"-By this time I had recollected myfelf fo far as to tell them he could not be a quarter of a mile before; and beg one of them to affift me in conveying the corps of my friend to the next house, in order to its being interred. The captain forefeeing that in case he pur-

D 2

0

re

at.

T-

ed

ck

ed

ea-

ne,

ent

his

aths

rap

nees

ice,

TCY

DOD

fued, he must soon come to action, began to curb his horse, and give him the spur at the same time, which making the creature rear up and fnort, he called out. his horse was frightned and would not proceed; at the same time wheeling him round and round, stroaking his neck, whiftling and wheedling him with "Sirrah, Sirrah-gently, gently, &c."-" Z-ds! " (cries one of the fervants) fure my Lord's Sorrel is " not refty!"-With these words, he bestowed a lash on his buttocks, and Sorrel disdaining the rein. forung forward with the captain at a pace that would have foon brought him up with the robber, had not the girth (happily for him) given way, by which means he landed in the dirt; and two of his attendants continued their pursuit, without minding his fituation in the leaft. - Mean while one of the three who remained at my defire, turning the body of Strap, in order to fee the wound which had killed him. fou nd him still warm and breathing; whereupon I im mediately let him blood, and faw him, with inexpressible joy, recover; he having received no other wound than what his fear inflicted. ---- Having got him upon his legs, we walked together to an inn, about half a mile from the place, where Strap being not quite recovered, went to bed; and in a little time after, the third fervant returned with the captain's horse and furniture, leaving him to crawl after as well as he could. This gentleman of the fword, upon his arrival, complained grievously of the bruise occafioned by his fall; and on the recommendation of the fervant, who warranted my ability, I was employed to bleed him, for which he rewarded me with

The time between this and dinner, I passed in obferving a game at cards between two farmers, an exciseman, and a young fellow in a rusty gown and cassock, who, as I afterwards understood, was curate of a neighbouring parish.——It was easy to perceive

that

. 1

-

N

h

tr

fo

th

of

hi

an

hi

ple

that the match was not equal; the two farmers being partners, having to do with a couple of sharpers, who stript them of all their cash in a very short time. - But what furprifed me very much, was to hear this clergyman reply to one of the countrymen who feemed to suspect foul play, in these words: "D-n me, " friend, d'ye question my honour?"-I did not at all wonder to find a cheat in canonicals, this being an animal frequent in my own country; but I was scandalized at the indecency of his behaviour, which appeared in the oaths he fwore, and the baudy fongs which he fung. At last, to make amends, in some fort, for the damage he had done to the unwary boors, he pulled out a fiddle from the lining of his gown, and promising to treat them at dinner, began to play most melodiously, singing in concert, all the while. -This good humour of the parlon inspired the company with fo much glee, that the farmers foon forgot their losses, and all hands went to dancing in the yard. While we were agreeably amused in this manner, our musician spying a horseman riding towards the inn, stopt all of a sudden, crying out, " Gad so! " gentlemen, I beg your pardon, there's our dog of " a doctor coming into the inn."—He immediately concealed his instrument, and ran towards the gate, where he took hold of the vicar's bridle, and helped him off, enquiring very cordially into the state of his health.— This rofy fon of the church (who might be about the age of fifty) having alighted, and entrusted the curate with his horse, stalked with great folemnity into the kitchen, where, fitting down by the fire, he called for a bottle of ale and a pipe; scarce deigning an answer to the submissive questions of some present who enquired about the welfare of his family. - While he indulged himself in this state, amidst a profound silence, the curate approaching him with great reverence, asked if he would not be pleased to honour us with his company at dinner? D 3

15

at

n,

ng

ne

1'9

ell

on

ca-

of

m-

rith

ob-

an

and

rate

eive

that

To which he answered in the negative, saying, he had been to visit squire Bumpkin, who had drank himfelf into a high fever at the last affizes; and that he had, on leaving his own house, told Betty he should dine at home - Accordingly, when he had made an end of his bottle and pipe, he got up and moved towards the door with the same dignity as when he entered; where his journeyman flood ready with his nag .- He had no fooner mounted, than this facetious parson, coming into the kitchen, began in this manner: " There " the old rafcal goes, and the D-I go with him.-"You fe how the world wags, gentlemen. - By "Gad, this rogue of a vicar does not deferve to " live; -and yet he has two livings worth 400/. per " annum, while poor I am fain to do all his drudgery, and ride twenty miles every Sunday to preach, " for what? why truly, for 201. a year.- I fcorn to " boaft of my own qualifications, but -comparisons " are odious. - I should be glad to know how this " fwag-bellied doctor deferves to be more at eafe than me. - He can loll in his elbow chair at home, " indulge himself in the best of victuals and wine, " and enjoy the conversation of Betty his house-" keeper. - You understand me, gentlemen. - Betty is the doctor's poor kinfwoman, and a pretty girl " fhe is; - but no matter for that; -ay, and a " dutiful girl to her parents, whom she goes to see " regularly every year, though I must own I could " never learn in what county they live .-"My fervice t'ye, gentlemen."-By this time dinner being ready, I waked my companion, and we eat all together with great chearfulness. When our meal was ended, and every man's share of the reckoning adjusted, the curate went out on pretence of some necessary occasion, and mounting his horse, left the two farmers to fatisfy the host in the best manner they could.—We were no fooner informed of this piece of finesse, than the exciseman who had been

filent

filent hitherto, began with a malicious grin, " Ay, " ay, this is an old trick of Shuffle, -I could not " help smiling, when he talked of treating.-You " must know, this is a very curious fellow .- Hepicked " up fome fcraps of learning while he ferved young " lord Trifle at the university. - But what he most " excels in is pimping. No man knows his talents " better than I, for I was valet de chambre to fquire " Tattle, an intimate companion of Shuffle's Lord. "-He got himself into a scrape, by pawning some "of his lordship's cloaths, on which account he was " turned away; but as he was acquainted with fome " particular circumstances of my lord's conduct, he " did not care to exasperate him too much, and so " made interest for his receiving orders, and after-" wards recommended him to the curacy which he " now enjoys. - However, the fellow cannot be too " much admired for his dexterity in making a com-" fortable livelihood, in spite of such a small allow-" ance.-You hear he plays a good flick, and is " really diverting company this makes him agree-"able wherever he goes; - and as for playing at " cards, there is not a man within three counties a match for him:—the truth is he is a damnable " cheat, and can shift a card with such address, that "it is impossible to discover him."—At this he was interrupted by one of the farmers, who asked him, why he had not justice enough to acquaint them with these particulars before they engaged in play? - The exciseman replied without any hesitation, that it was none of his bufiness to intermeddle between man and man; besides, he did not know they were ignorant of Shuffle's character, which was notorious to the whole country. - This did not fatisfy the other, who taxed him with abetting and affifting the curate's knavery, and infifted on having his share of the winning returned; this the excifeman as politively refuled, affirming, that whatever flights Shuffle might practife D 4

rl

d

1-

at

al

d-

ne

he

er

his

en

ent

practise on other occasions, he was very certain, that he had play'd on the square with them, and would answer it before any bench in christendom; so saying, he got up, and having paid his reckoning, sneaked off. The landlord thrusting his neck into the passage, to see if he was gone, shook his head, saying, "Ah! Lord help us! if every sinner was to have his deserts.—Well, we victuallers must not dissuppose the excisemen.—But I know what,—if parson Shuffle and he were weighed together, a straw thrown into either scale would make the ballance kick the beam.—But, masters, this is under the rose," continued Bonisace with a whisper.

00000000000000000000000

CHAP. X.

The bighwayman is taken — we are detained as evidences against him — proceed to the next willage — he escapes — we arrive at another inn, where we go to bed — in the night we are awaked by a dreadful adventure — next night we lodge at the house of a school-master—our treatment there.

STRAP and I were about to depart on our journey, when we perceived a croud on the road, coming towards us shouting and hollowing all the way. As it approached, we could discern a man on horse-back in the middle, with his hands tied behind him, whom we soon knew to be Risse. — This highwayman not being so well mounted at the two servants who went in pursuit of him, was soon overtaken, and after having discharged his pistols, made prisoner without any further opposition. They were

carrying him in triumph, amidst the acclamations of the country people, to a justice of peace in a neighbouring village, but stopt at our inn to join their companion and take refreshment. When Rifle was dismounted, and placed in the yard, within a circle of peafants armed with pitchforks, I was amazed to see what a pitiful dejected fellow he now appeared, who had but a few hours before filled me with fuch terror and confusion .- My companion was fo much encouraged by this alteration in his appearance, that going up to the thief, he presented his clenched fists to his nose, and declared, he would either cudgel or box with the prisoner for a guinea, which he immediately produced, and began to ftrip - but was diffuaded from this adventure by me, who represented to him the folly of the undertaking, as Rifle was now in the hands of justice, which would, no doubt, give us all fatisfaction enough. - But what made me repent of our impertinent curiofity, was our being detained by the captors, as evidence against him, when we were just going to fet forward. However, there was no remedy; we were obliged to comply, and accordingly joined in the cavalcade, which luckily took the fame road that we had proposed to follow. - About the twilight we arrived at the place of our destination, but as the inflice was gone to vifit a gentleman in the country. with whom (we understood) he would probably stay all night, the robber was confined in an empty garret three stories high, from which it seemed impossible for him to escape: this, nevertheless, was the case; for next morning, when they went up stairs, to bring him before the justice, the bird was flown, having got out at the window upon the leads, from whence he continued his rout along the tops of the adjoining houses, and got into another garret window, where he sculked, until the family were asleep, at which time he ventured down stairs, and let himself out by the ftreet door, which was found open. This event was

a great disappointment to those that apprehended him, who were flushed with hopes of the reward; but gave me great joy, as I was permitted now to continue my journey without any further molestation. - Refolving to make up for the small progress we had hitherto made, we this day travelled with great vigour, and before night got to a market-town twenty miles from the place from whence we fet out in the morning, without meeting any adventure worth notice.-Here having taken up our lodging at an inn, I found myself so fatigued, that I began to despair of performing our journey on foot, and defired Strap to enquire if there was any waggon, return-horses, or other cheap carriage in this place, to depart for London next day.-He was informed, that the waggon from Newcastle for London had halted here two nights ago, and that it would be an easy matter to overtake it, if not the next day, at farthest, the day after the next. - This piece of news gave us fome fatisfaction, and after having made a hearty supper on hashed mutton, we were shewn to our room, which contained two beds, the one allotted for us, and the other for a very honest gentleman, who, we were told, was then drinking below. Though we could have very well dispensed with his company, we were glad to submit to this disposition, as there was not another bed empty in the house; and accordingly went to rest, after having secured our baggage under the boliter. About two or three a-clock in the morning, I was waked out of a very profound fleep, by a dreadful noise in the chamber, which did not fail to throw me into an agony of consternation, when I heard these words pronounced with a terrible voice. - "Blood and wounds! run the halbert into the guts of him that's next you, and I'll blow the other's brains out prefently."-This dreadful falutation had no fooner reached the ears of Strap, than flarting out of bed, he ran against some body in the

dark, and overturned him in an instant; at the same time bawling out, "Fire! murder! fire!" which in a moment alarmed the whole house, and filled our chamber with a croud of naked people. - When lights were brought, the occasion of all this disturbance foon appeared; which was no other than our fellowlodger, whom we found lying on the floor fcratching his head, with a look testifying the utmost astonishment, at the concourse of apparitions that surrounded him.-This honest gentleman was, it seems, a recruiting ferjeant, who having lifted two country fellows over-night, dreamed they had mutinied, and threatened to murder him and the drummer who was alone with him. This made fuch an impression on his imagination, that he got up in his fleep, and expressed himself as above. When our apprehension of danger vanished, the company beheld one another with great furprize and mirth; but what attracted the notice of every one, was our landlady with nothing on her but her shift and a large pair of buckskin breeches with the backfide before, which she had flipt on in the hurry, and her husband with her petticoat about his shoulders: one had wrapt himself in a blanket, another was covered with a sheet, and the drummer who had given his only thirt to be washed. appeared in querpo with the bolfter rolled about his middle. - When this affair was discussed, every body retired to his own apartment, the ferjeant flipt into bed, and my companion and I flept without any further disturbance till morning, when we got up, went to breakfast, paid our reckoning, and set forward in expectation of overtaking the waggon; in which, however, we were disappointed that day. As we exerted ourselves more than usual, I found myself quite spent with fatigue, when we entered a fmall village in the twilight. We enquired for a publick house, and were directed to one of a very forry appearance. At our entrance the landlord, who D 6 feemed

feemed to be a venerable old man, with long grey hair, rose from a table placed by a large fire in a very neat paved kitchen, and with a chearful countenance accosted us in these words : " Salvete Pueri-ingre-" dimini,"-I was not a little pleased to hear our host fpeak Latin. because I was in hopes of recommending myfelf to him by my knowledge in that language; I therefore answered without helitation, - Diffolve frigus, ligna super foco, -large reponens. - I had no sooner pronounced these words, than the old gentleman runing towards me, shook me by the hand, crying, - Fili mi delectissime! unde venis!-a superis, ni " faller?"-In short, finding we were both read in the classics, he did not know how to testify his regard, but ordered his daughter, a jolly rofy-cheeked damfel, who was his fole domestic, to bring us a bottle of his quadrimum - repeating from Horace at the same time, " Deprome quadrimum sabina, O Tha-" liarche, merum diotà." This quadrimum was excellent ale of his own brewing, of which he told us he had always an amphora four years old, for the use of himself and friends. - In the course of our conversation, which was interlarded with scraps of Latin, we understood that this facetious person was a schoolmafter, whose income being small, he was fain to keep a glass of good liquor for the entertainment of passengers, by which he made shift to make the two ends of the year meet .- "I am this day, faid he, the happiest old fellow in his majesty's dominions. " - My wife, rest her soul, is in heaven. " daughter is to be married next week; - but the " two chief pleasures of my life are these (pointing " to the bottle and a large edition of Horace that lay on the table.) I am old, 'tis true, -what then? the more reason I should enjoy the small share of " life that remains, as my friend Flaccus advises:se Tu ne quæsieris scire (nefas.) Quem mibi, quem tibi finem dii dederint - Carpe diem quam mice nimum

" nimum credula postero." - As he was very inquisitive about our affairs, we made no scruple of acquainting him with our fituation, which when he had learned, he enriched us with advices how to behave in the world, telling us that he was no ftranger to the deceits of mankind. - In the mean time he ordered his daughter to lay a fowl to the fire for fupper. for he was resolved this night to regale his friends permittens divis catera.-While our entertainment was preparing, our host recounted the adventures of his own life, which, as they contain nothing remarkable, I forbear to rehearfe. When we had fared fumptuously, and drank several bottles of his quadrimum, I expressed a desire of going to rest, which was with fome difficulty complied with, after he had informed us that we should overtake the waggon by noon next day; and that there was room enough in it for half a dozen, there being only four passengers as yet in that convenience. - Before my comrade and I fell afleep we had some conversation about the good humour of our landlord, which gave Strap such an idea of his benevolence, that he positively believed we should pay nothing for our lodging and entertainment. - "Don't you observe, said he, that he has con-" ceived a particular affection for us,-nay, even " treated us at supper with extraordinary fare, which, " to be fure, we should not of ourselves have called " for?"—I was partly of Strap's opinion; but the experience I had of the world made me suspend my belief till to-morrow morning, when getting up betimes, we breakfasted with our host and his daughter on hafty-pudding and ale, and defired to know what we had to pay. - " Biddy will let you know, " gentlemen, faid he, for I never mind these matters. " - Money matters are beneath the concern of one " who lives on the Horatian plan .- Crescentem fe-" quitur cura pecuniam." Mean while Biddy having confulted a flate that hung in the corner, told us, our reckon-

reckoning came to 8 1. 7 d " Eight shillings
and feven pence! cried Strap, 'tis impossible-
you must be mistaken, young woman."-" Reck-
on again, child, (fays her father, very deliberate-
1y) perhaps you have miscounted."-" No indeed,
" father (she replied) I know my business better."-
I could contain my indignation no longer, but faid
it was an unconfcionable bill, and demanded to know
the particulars; upon which the old man got up,
muttering, " Ay, ay, let us fee the particulars,-
" that's but reasonable." - And taking pen, ink, and
paper, wrote the following Items: s. d.
· 医大型性动物 (1) 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1

To bread and beer - - - - 0 6
To a fowl and faufages - - - 2 6
To four bottles quadrim. - - - 2 0
To fire and tobacco - - - 0 7
To lodging - - - - - 2 0
To breakfaft - - - - 1 0

8 7

As he had not the appearance of a common publican, and had raised a fort of veneration in me by his demeanour the preceding night, it was not in my power to upbraid him as he deserved; therefore I contented myself with saying, I was fure he did not learn to be an extortioner from Horace. He answered, "I was but a young man, and did not know the world, or I would not tax him with extortion, whose only aim was to live contentus parvo, and keep off importuna pauperies."—My fellow-traveller could not so easily put up with this imposition; but swore he should either take one third of the money, or go without. - While we were engaged in this dispute, I perceived the daughter go out, and conjecturing the occasion, immediately paid the exorbitant demand, which was no fooner-done, than Biddy returned with two flout fellows, who came in on pretence of taking their morning draught; but in reality to frighten us into compliance.—Just as we departed, Strap, who was half distracted on account of this piece of expence, went up to the school master, and grinning in his face, pronounced with great emphasis; "Semper avarus eget."—To which the pedant replied, with a malicious smile; "Animum rege, qui, nist paret, imperat."

CHAP. XI.

We descry the waggon—get into it—arrive at an inn—our fellow travellers described—a mistake is committed by Strap, which produces strange things.

TE travelled half a mile without exchanging one word; my thoughts being engroffed by the knavery of the world, to which I must be daily exposed; and the contemplation of my finances. which began fenfibly to diminish.—At length Strap. who could hold no longer, addressed me thus :-"Well, fools and their money are foon parted.—
"If my advice had been taken, that old skin-flint " should have been damn'd before he had got more "than the third of his demand.—'Tis a fure fign " you came eafily by your money, when you fquan-" der it away in this manner. - Ah! God help you, " how many brifly beards must I have mowed be-" fore I earned four shillings and threepence halfe penny, which is all thrown to the dogs?-How " many days have I fat weaving hair, till my toes "were numbed by the cold, my fingers cramp'd, " and my nose as blue as the sign of the periwig that " hung over the door? What the devil was you " afraid of? I would have engaged to box with any one of those fellows who came in, for a guinea

e

I

e-

6.2

ty

" -I'm fure I have beat stouter men than either of them."-And indeed, my companion would have fought any body, when his life was in no danger; but he had a mortal aversion to fire arms and all instruments of death. In order to appeale him, I affured him, no part of this extraordinary expence fhould fall upon his shoulders; at which he was affronted, and told me, he would have me to know, that although he was a poor barber's boy, he had a foul to fpend his money with the best squire of the land.—Having walked all day at a great pace, without halting for a refreshment, we descried towards the evening, to our inexpressible joy, the waggon about a quarter of a mile before us; and by that time we came up with it, were both of us fo weary, that I verily believe it would have been impracticable for us to have walked one mile farther. - We therefore bargained with the driver, whose name was Joey, to give us a cast to the next stage for a shilling; at which place we should meet the master of the waggon, with whom we might agree for the rest of the journey.

Accordingly the convenience stopt, and Joey having placed the ladder, Strap (being loaded with our baggage) mounted first; but just as he was getting in, a tremendous voice affailed his ears in these words: "God's fury! there shall no passengers come here." -The poor shaver was so disconcerted at this exclamation, which both he and I imagined proceeded from the mouth of a giant, that he descended with great velocity, and a countenance as white as paper. -Joey perceiving our aftonishment, called with an arch fneer, "Waunds, coptain, whay woan't yau " fooffer the poor waggoneer to meake a penny?-" Coom, coom, young man, get oop, get oop,-" never moind the coptain. I'le not afear'd of the " coptain."-This was not encouragement fufficient to Strap, who could not be prevailed upon to ven-

0

"

"

"

m

ture

ture up again; upon which I attempted, though not without a quaking heart, when I heard the fame voice muttering like distant thunder: " Hell and the " devil confound me if I don't make you fmart for " this!"-However I crept in, and by accident got an empty place in the ftraw, which I immediately took possession of, without being able to discern the faces of my fellow-travellers in the dark. Strap following with the knapfack on his back, chanced to take the other fide, and by a jolt of the carriage, pitched directly upon the stomach of the captain. who bellowed out in a most dreadful manner: " Blood " and thunder ! where's my fword ?" At these words, my frighted comrade flarted up, and at one spring bounced against me with such force, that I thought the supposed son of Anak intended to press me to death. - In the mean time a female voice cried, "Bless me! what is the matter, my dear?" "The " matter," replied the captain, " damn my blood! " my guts are squeezed into a pancake, by that " Scotchman's hump." Strap trembling all the while at my back, asked him pardon, and laid the blame of what had happened upon the jolting of the waggon. The woman who spoke before, went on: " Ay, ay, my dear, it is our own fault, we may " thank ourselves for all the inconveniencies we meet " with.—I thank God, I never travelled so before, "-I'm fure if my lady or Sir John was to know " where we are, they would not fleep this night for " vexation-I wish to God we had writ for the cha-"riot, - I know we shall never be forgiven." "Come, come, my dear, (replied the captain) it " don't fignify fretting now, - we shall laugh it over " as a frolick, -I hope you will not fuffer in your " health.- I shall make my lord very merry with our " adventures in the Diligence."—This discourse gave me fuch a high notion of the captain and his lady. that I durit not venture to join in the conversation; but

"

d

h

r.

n

u

he

nt

n-

but immediately after, another female voice began; "Some people give themselves a great many needless " airs-better folks than any here have travelled in waggons before now.—Some of us have rode in coaches and chariots with three footmen behind " them, without making fo much fus about it. -"What then? we are now all upon a footing, therefore let us be fociable and merry. - What do "you fay, Ifaac? Is'n't this a good motion, you " doting rogue ?- Speak, you old cent. per cent, for-" nicator. - What desperate debt are you thinking " of ? What mortgage are you planning? Well, 66 Ifaac, politively you shall never gain my favour " till you turn over a new leaf; grow honest, and " live like a gentleman .- In the mean time, give me a kils, you old fumbler."-These words accompanied with a hearty fmack, enlivened the person to whom they were addressed, to such a degree, that he cried in transport, tho' with a faultering voice, "Ah! you wanton baggage upon my credit, you are a waggiff girl, the, the, he."-This laugh introduced a fit of coughing, which almost suffocated the poor usurer (such, we afterwards found, was the profession of this our fellow-traveller.) - About this rtime I fell affeep, and enjoyed a comfortable nap till fuch time as we arrived at the inn where we put up. -Here, having got out of the waggon first, I had an opportunity of viewing the paffengers in order as they entered. The first who appeared was a brisk airy girl, about twenty years old, with a filver laced "hat on her head, instead of a cap, a blue stuff riding fuit trimmed with filver, very much tarnished, and a whip in her hand. - After her, came limping, an old man with a worfted night-cap, buttoned under his chin, and a broad brimmed hat flouched over it, an old rufty blue cloak tied about his neck, under which appeared a brown furtout, that covered a thread-bare coat and waite-coat, and, as we afterwards difcernn

0

u

r-

II,

ar

br

ne

n-

to

he

ce,

ou

10-

the

his

till

úþ. hád

as rifk

ced

ing

nd a

old his

an

hich

bare ern-

ed.

ed, a dirty flannel jacket.-His eyes were hollow, bleared and gummy; his face was shrivelled into a thousand wrinkles, his gums were destitute of teeth, his nofe sharp and drooping, his chin peeked and prominent, fo that when he mumped or spoke, they approached one another like a pair of nut-crackers; he supported himself on an ivory-headed cane, and his whole figure was a just emblem of winter, famine, and avarice. But how was I furprized, when I beheld the formidable captain in the shape of a little thin creature, about the age of forty, with a long withered vifage, very much refembling that of a baboon, through the upper part of which, two little grew eyes peeped: He wore his own hair in a queue that reached to his rump, which immoderate length, I suppose, was the occasion of a baldness that appeared on the crown of his head, when he deigned to take off his hat, which was very much of the fize and cock of Pistol's.—Having laid aside his great coat, I could not help admiring the extraordinary make of this man of war: He was about five foot and three inches high, fixteen inches of which went to his face and long fcraggy neck; his thighs were about fix inches in length, his legs refembling spindles or drum-sticks, two feet and an half, and his body, which put me in mind of extension without substance, engrossed the remainder; - so that on the whole, he appeared like a spider or grashopper erect, -and was almost a vox & preterea nibil. His dress consisted of a frock of what is called bear-skin, the skirts of which were about half a foot long, an Husfar waist-coat, scarlet breeches reaching half-way down his thigh, worsted stockings rolled up almost to his groin, and shoes with wooden heels at least two inches high; he carried a fword very near as long as himself in one hand, and in the other conducted his lady, who feemed to be a woman of his own age, and still retained some remains of an agreeable

able person; but so ridiculously affected, that had I then known as much of the world as I do now, I might have easily perceived in her, the deplorable vanity and fecond-hand airs of a lady's woman. We were all affembled in the kitchen, when captain Weazle (for that was his name) defired a room with a fire for himself and spouse; and told the landlord, they would sup by themselves .- The inn-keeper replied, that he could not afford them a room by themfelves; and as for supping, he had prepared victuals for the passengers in the waggon without respect of persons, but if he could prevail on the rest to let him have his choice in a feparate manner, with all his heart. This was no fooner faid, than all of us declared against the proposal, and miss Jenny (our other female passenger) observed, that if captain Weazel and his lady had a mind to fup by themselves, they might wait until we should have done. - At this, the captain put on a martial frown and looked very big, without speaking; while his yoke-fellow, with a disdainful toss of her nose, muttered something about "Creature;"-which miss Jenny over-hearing, stept up to her, faying, " None of your names, " good Mrs. Abigail; -creature quotha, -I'll affure " you, - No fuch creature as you neither --- no ten . 66 pound fneaker-no quality coupler."-Here the captain interpoled with a "Damme, madam, what " d'ye mean by that? " _ " Damn you, Sir, who are " you? (replied Miss Jenny) who made you a captain, you pitiful, trencher-scraping, pimping curler? - 'Sdeath! the army is come to a fine pass, when such fellows as you get commissions. - What, " I suppose you think I don't know you ? - By G-d, you and your helpmate are well met, - a cast-off mistress, and a bald valet de chambre are well yoked together," " Blood and wounds! (cried Weazel) " d'ye question the honour of my wife, madam !-" Hell and damnation! No man in England durft f

S

ir

n

s,

S,

ry

ng

11-

es,

ire

en

he

hat

are

ap-

ur-

afs.

nat,

--d,

-off

ked

zel)

1-

lust fay

fay fo much, -I would flea him, carbonado him ! " Fury and destruction I would have his liver for " my fupper."-So faying, he drew his fword and flourished with it, to the great terror of Strap: while Miss Jenny snapping her fingers, told him, she did not value his refentment a f-t. - In the midft of this quarrel, the mafter of the waggon alighted, who understanding the cause of it, and fearing the captain and his lady would take to much umbrage, as to leave his carriage, was at great pains to have every thing made up, which he at last accomplished, and we sat down to supper all together. At bed-time we were shewn to our apartment. The old usurer, Strap and I, were conducted to one room; the captain, his wife, and Miss Jenny to another .- About midnight. my companion's bowels being difordered, he got up, in order to go backward; but in his return, miftaking one door for another, entered Weazel's chamber, and without any hefitation went to bed to his wife, who was fast asleep; the captain being at another end of the room groping for some empty vessel, his own chamber-pot being leaky: As he did not perceive Strap coming in, he went toward his own bed, after having found a convenience; but no fooner did he feel a rough head with a cotton night-cap on it, than it came into his mind, that he was got to Miss Jenny's bed instead of his own, and that the head he felt was that of fome gallant, with whom the had made an affignation .-- Full of this conjecture. and scandalized at the proflitution of his apartment. he inatched up the vessel he had just before filled, and emptied it at once on the aftonished barber, and his own wife, who waking at that instant, broke forth into lamentable cries, which not only alarmed the hulband beyond measure, but frightened poor Strap almost out of his senses; for he verily believed himfelf bewitched; especially when the incensed captain feized him by the throat, with a volley of oaths, alking

W

on

66

Cra

the

66

66

66

cil

ren

min

lad

asking him how he durst have the presumption to attempt the chaftity of his wife.-Poor Strap was for amazed and confounded, that he could fay nothing, but,- " I take God to witness the's a virgin for " me." - Mrs. Weazel enraged to find herself in fuch a pickle, through the precipitation of her hufband, got up in her shift, and with the heel of her shoe, which she found by the bed-side, belaboured the captain's bald pate, till he cried " Murder."-"I'll teach you to empty your flink-pots on me, " (cried she) you pitiful, hop o' my thumb coxcomb. What? I warrant you're jealous, you man of lath. Was it for this I condescended to take you to my bed, you poor, withered faples twig?"----The noise occasioned by this adventure, had brought the mafter of the waggon and me to the door, where we overheard all that passed, with great satisfaction. In the mean time we were alarmed with the cry of "Rape! Murder! Rape!" which miss Jenny pronounced with great vociferation. - "O! you vile, se abominable old villain, (faid fhe) would you rob me of my virtue --- But I'll be revenged of you, you old goat! I will! -- -- help! for heaven's fake! help! --- I shall be ravished! ruined! help"! -----Some fervants of the inn hearing this cry, came running up stairs with lights, and such weapons as chance afforded; when we beheld a very diverting scence .-- In one corner stood the poor captain shivering in his his shirt, which was all torn to rags; with a woful vifage, fcratched all over by his wife, who had by this time wrapt the counterpane about her, and fat fobbing on the fide of her bed .-- In the other end, lay the old usurer sprawling on miss Jenny's bed, with his flannel jacket over his fhirt, and his tawny meagre limbs exposed to the air; while the held him faff by the two ears, and loaded him with execrations. --- When we asked what was the matter, she affected to weep, told usy the was afraid that wicked rogue had ruined her in her fleep, and bad us take notice of what we faw, for she intended to make use of our evidence against him. The poor wretch looked like one more dead than alive, and begged for Christ's fake to be released; which was no sooner done, than he protested she was no woman, but a devil incarnate -that the had first feduced his flesh to rebel, and then betrayed him.- "Yes, cockatrice (continued "he,) you know you laid this fnare for me-but " you fhan't fucceed-for I will hang myfelf before " you shall get a farthing of me."-So faying he crawled to his own bed, groaning all the way .- We then advanced to the captain, who told us, "Gen-" tlemen, here has been a damn'd mistake; but I'll " be reveng'd on him who was the occasion of it-"That Scotchman who carries the knapfack shall " not breathe this vital air another day, if my name " be Weazel.-My dear, I ask you ten thousand " pardons; you are fenfible I could mean no harm " to you. - " I know not what you meant (replied " the fighing) but I know I have got enough to fend " me to my grave."-At length they were reconciled.—The wife was complimented with a share of mis Jenny's bed (her own being overflowed) and the master of the waggon invited Weazel to sleep the remaining part of the night with him. I retired to mine, where I found Strap mortally afraid, he having got away in the dark, while the captain and his lady were at logger-heads.

d

CHAP. XII.

Captain Weazel challenges Strap, who declines the combat—an affair between the captain and me—the usurer is fain to give miss Jenny five guineas for a release—we are in danger of losing a meal—the behaviour of Weazel, Jenny, and Joey on that occasion—an account of captain Weazel and his lady—the captain's courage tried—Isaac's mirth at the captain's expence.

by

W

fle

66

"

tur

nar

ec f

of a

fpri

the

ble

long

I go

Ver

atio

thef

TEXT morning, I agreed to give the mafter of the waggon ten shillings for my passage to London, provided Strap should be allowed to take my place when I should be disposed to walk.—At the same time I desired him to appeale the incensed captain, who by this time had got into the kitchen, with a drawn fword in his hand, and threatned with many oaths, to facrifice the villain, who attempted to violate his bed; but it was to no purpose for the master to explain the mistake, and assure him of the poor lad's innocence, who flood strembling behind me all the while: the more submission that appeared in Strap, the more implacable feemed the refentment of Weazel, who fwore he must either fight him, or he would instantly put him to death. I was extremely provoked at this insolence, and told him, it could not be supposed that a poor barber lad would engage a man of the fword at his own weapon; but I was perfuaded he would wrestle or box with him. To which proposal Strap immediately gave affent, by faying, he would box with him for a guinea. -Weazel replied with a look of disdain, that it was beneath

neath any gentleman of his character to fight like a porter, or even to put himself on a footing, in any respect, with such a fellow as Strap.—" Ods bodi-" kins! (cries Joey) fure coptain, yaw wauld not " coommit moorder! Here's a poor lad that is will-" ing to make attoonement for his offence; and an " that woant't satisfie yaw, offers to fight yaw fairly. "—And yaw woan't box, I dare fay, he will coodgel "with yaw. - Woan't yaw, my lad?" - Strap, after fome hesitation, answered, "Ye-yes, I'll cudgel " with him."-But this expedient being also rejected by the captain, I began to smell his character, and tipping Strap the wink, told the company, that I had always heard it faid, the person who receives a challenge should have the choice of the weapons; this therefore being the rule in point of honour, I would venture to promise on the head of my companion, that he would even fight captain Weazel at sharps; but it should be with such sharps as Strap was best acquainted with, namely razors. - At my mentioning razors, I could perceive the captain's colour to change, while Strap pulling me by the fleeve, whispered with great eagerness; -- "No, no, " no; for the love of God, don't make any such " bargain."—At length Weazel recovering himself, turned towards me, and with a ferocious countenance, asked "Who the devil are you !-will you "fight me?" With these words putting himself in a posture, I was grievously alarmed at seeing the point of a fword within half a foot of my breast; and springing to one side, snatched up a spit that stood in the chimney corner, with which I kept my formidable adversary at bay, who made a great many halflonges, skipping backward every time, till at last I I got him pinned up in a corner, to the no small divertion of the company. While he was in this fituation, his wife entered, and feeing her hulband in these dangerous circumstances, uttered a dreadful Vol. I. fcream:

10

y

ld

25

by

一京山

fcream: Upon this, Weazel demanded a ceffation, which was immediately granted; and at last was contented with the submission of Strap, who falling on his knees before him, protested the innocence of his intention, and asked pardon for the mistake he had committed. This affair being ended without bloodshed, we went to breakfast, but missed two of our company, to wit, miss Jenny and the usurer. As for the first, Mrs. Weazel informed us, that she had kept her awake all night with her groans; and that when she got up this morning, miss Jenny was fo much indisposed, that she could not proceed on her journey. At this moment, a message came from her to the mafter of the waggon, who immediately went into her chamber, followed by us all. told him in a lamentable tone, that she was afraid of a miscarriage, owing to the fright she received last night, from the brutality of Isaac; and as the event was uncertain, defired the usurer might be detained to answer for the consequence. Accordingly this ancient Tarquin was found in the waggon, whither he had retired to avoid the shame of last night's disgrace; and brought by force into her presence. He no fooner appeared, than she began to weep and figh most piteously, and told us, if she died, she would leave her blood upon the head of that ravisher. Poor Isaac, turning up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver bim from the machinations of that Jezabel; and affured us with tears in his eyes, that his being found in bed with her, was the refult of her own invitation. The waggoner understanding the case, advised Isaac to make it up, by giving her a fum of money, to which he replied with great vehemence, "A fum of money! - a halter for the " cocatrice!"-" O! 'tis very well, (faid miss Jen-" ny) I fee it is in vain to attempt that flinty heart of his, by fair means. - Joey, be fo good as to go to the Justice, and tell him there is a fick person 66 here, SEE STA

to

pe

fo

to

ter

W

fol

by

tee

mo

pre

he

faid " d " here, who wants to fee him on an affair of con-" fequence." - At the name of Justice, Isaac trembled, and bidding Joey stay, asked with a quavering voice, " what she would have?" She told him, that as he had not perpetrated his wicked purpose, she would be fatisfied with a small matter. - And though the damage she might fustain in her health, might be irreparable, fhe would give him a release for an hundred guineas. - "An hundred guineas! (cried he in " an extafy) an hundred furies !- Where should a " poor old wretch like me, have an hundred guineas? if I had fo much money, d'ye think I should be " found travelling in a waggon, at this feafon of "the year?"-" Come, come, (rep'ied Jenny) "None of your miserly artifice here. You think I " don't know Isaac Rapine the money-broker in the " Minories. - Ah! you old rogue! many a pawn " have you had from me and my acquaintance which " was never redeemed." - Ifaac finding it was in vain to disguise himself, offered twenty shillings for a discharge, which she absolutely refused under fifty pounds: At last, however, she was brought down to five, which he paid with great reluctancy, rather than be profecuted for a rape. After which the fick person made shift to get into the waggon, and we set forwards in great tranquillity, Strap being accommodated with Joey's horse, the driver himself choosing to walk. - This morning and forenoon we were entertained with an account of the valour of captain Weazel, who told us he had once knocked down a foldier that made game of him; tweaked a drawer by the nose, who found fault with his picking his teeth with a fork at another time; and that he had moreover challenged a cheefe-monger, who had the prefumption to be his rival, - for the truth of which he appealed to his wife. - She confirmed whatever he faid, and observed " the last affair happened that very " day on which, I received a love-letter from fquire E 2 "Gobble;

e

ft

re

C,

at

of

es,

ult

ng eat

the

en-

art

go

fon

re,

"Gobble; - and don't you remember, my dear, I was prodigiously sick that very night with eating ortolans, when my lord Diddle took notice of " my complexion's being altered, and my lady was " fo alarmed, that she had well nigh fainted."--" Yes. my dear, (replied the captain) you know, my lord " faid to me, with a fneer," _ " Billy, Mrs. Weazed is certainly breeding." - And I answered cavalierly, "My lord, I wish I could return the compliment.—Upon which the whole company broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter; and my co lord, who loves a repartee dearly, came round and buffed me." - We travelled in this manner five days, without interruption or meeting any thing worth notice: Miss Jenny (who soon recovered her fpirits) entertaining us every day with diverting fongs, of which she could fing a great number; and rallying her old gallant, who notwithstanding could never be reconciled to her. - On the fixth day, while we were about to fit down to dinner, the inn-keeper came and told us, that three gentlemen just arrived, had ordered the victuals to be carried to their apartment, altho' he had informed them that they were bespoke by the passengers in the waggon. To which they had replied, "The passengers in the waggon might be damn'd-their betters must be served before them, - they supposed it would be no hardship on fuch travellers to dine upon bread and cheele for one day." -- Thiswas a terrible disappointment to us all; and we laid our heads together how to remedy it; when miss Jenny observed that captain Weazel, being by profession a soldier, ought in this case to protect and prevent us from being infulted .- But the captain excused himself, saying, he would not for all the world be known to have travelled in a waggon; fwearing at the same time, that could he appear with honour, they should eat his sword sooner than his provision.—Upon this declaration, mils Jenny snatching

To

in

to

Wi

COL

dor

wh

pri

fori

He

ferv

tally

quai

his weapon, drew it, and ran immediately to the kitchen where she threatned to put the cook to death, if he did not fend the victuals into our chamber immediately. The noise she made, brought the three ftrangers down, one of whom no sooner perceived her, than he cried, "Ha! Jenny Ramper! what " the devil brought thee hither?" - " My dear Jack " Rattle! (replied she, running into his arms) is "it you?-Then Weazel may go to hell for a " dinner - I shall dine with you." - They consented to this, with a great deal of joy; and we were on the point of being reduced to a very uncomfortable meal, when Joey understanding the whole affair, entered the kitchen with a pitchfork in his hand, and fwore he would be the death of any man who should pretend to feize the victuals prepared for the waggon. -This menace had like to have produced fatal confequences; the three strangers drawing their swords, and being joined by their fervants, and we ranging ourselves on the side of Joey; when the landlord interpoling, offered to part with his own dinner to keep the peace, which was accepted by the strangers; and we fat down at table without any further moleftation. In the afternoon, I chofe to walk along with Joey, and Strap took my place. Having entered into a conversation with this driver, I soon found him to be a merry, facetious, good-natured fellow, and withal very arch: He informed me, that miss Jenny was a common girl upon the town, who falling into company with a recruiting officer, he carried her down in the stage-coach from London to Newcastle, where he had been arrested for debt, and was now in prison; upon which she was fain to return to her former way of life, in the manner we found her. He told me likewise, that one of the gentlemen's fervants, whom we left at the inn, having accidentally feen Weazel, immediately knew him, and acquainted Joey, with some particulars of his character.

d

YS

d,

t-

re

ch

on

be-

hip

eele

atto

redy

zel

fe to

t the

t for

gon;

with

pro-

hing

That he had ferved my lord Frizzle in quality of valet de chambre many years; while he lived separate from his lady: But upon their reconciliation, she expresly insisted upon Weazel's being turned off, as well as the woman he kept: whereupon his lordship, to get rid of them both with a good grace, proposed that he should marry his mistress, and he would procure a commission for him in the army; this expedient was agreed to, and Weazel is now, by his lordship's interest, ensign in--'s regiment. I found he and I had the fame fentiments with regard to Weazel's courage, which we resolved to put to the trial, by alarming the passengers with the cry of, "an highwayman!" as soon as an horseman should ap-This we put in practice towards the dusk, when we descried a man on horseback approaching us. Joey had no fooner intimated to the people in the waggon, that he was afraid we should be all robbed, than a general confernation arose: Strap jumped out of the waggon and hid himfelf behind a hedge. The usurer put forth ejaculations, and made a rustling among the straw, which made us conjecture he had hid fomething under it. Mrs. Weazel wringing her hands, uttered lamentable cries; and the captain, to our great amazement, began to snore; but this artifice did not succeed; for Miss Jenny, shaking him by the shoulder, bawl'd out, "Sdeath! " captain, is this a time to fnore, when we are go-"ing to be robbed? - Get up for shame, and behave " like a foldier and a man of honour." - Weazel pretended to be in a great passion for being disturbed, and fwore he would have his nap out if all the highwaymen in England furrounded him. - "D-n " my blood! what are you afraid of?" (continued he;) at the same time trembling with such agitation, that the whole carriage shook. This fingular piece of behaviour incenfed miss Ramper so much, that she cried " D-n your pitiful foul, you are as « arrant

66

46

"

"

66

one

Wif

Th

ingl

wak

ee (2

" arrant a poltroon as ever was drummed out of a regi-" ment. - Stop the waggon, Joey - let me get out, " and by G-d, if I have rhetorick enough, the thief " shall not only take your purse, but your skin also." - So faying the leapt out with great agility. By this time the horseman came up with us, and happened to be a gentleman's fervant well known to Joey, who communicated the scheme, and desired him to carry it on a little further, by going up to the waggon, and questioning those within. The stranger consenting for the fake of diversion, approached it, and in a terrible tone, demanded, "Who have we got here?" -Isaac replied with a lamentable voice, "Here's " a po'r miserable sinner, who has got a small family " to maintain, and nothing in the world wherewith-" all, but these fifteen shillings, which if you rob " me of we must all starve together."-" Who's " that fobbing in the other corner?" faid the fupposed highwayman.) "A poor unfortunate woman, " (answered Mrs. Weazel) upon whom I beg you " for Christ's fake to have compassion." - " Are " you maid or wife?" (faid he) "Wife to my for-"row," (cried she.) - "Who, or where is your " husband?" (continued he.) - " My husband, (re-" plied Mrs. Weazel) is an officer in the army, and " was left fick at the last inn where we dined."-"You must be mistaken, madam, (said he) for I " myself faw him get into the waggon this afternoon; "-But pray what fmell is that? Sure your lap-dog has " befoul'd himfelf; -- let me catch hold of the nasty cur, " I'll teach him better manners."--Here he laid hold of . one of Weazel's legs, and pulled him out from under his wife's petticoats where he had concealed himfelf .--The poor trembling captain being detected in this inglorious fituation, rubbed his eyes, and affecting to wake out of fleep, cried, "What's the matter?---"What's the matter?"—" The matter is not much, " (answered the horseman) I only called in to enquire E 4

e.

ne

pout

ik-

h!

go-

ave

azel urb-

the

nued

tati-

gular

re as

rrant

374

" after your health, and so adieu most noble cap-" tain." - So faying, he clapped spurs to his horse, and was out of fight in a moment.-It was some time before Weazel could recollect himself, but at length, re-affuming the big look, he faid, " Damn the fellow! " why did he ride away, before I had time to ask " him how his lord and lady do?-Don't you re-" member Tom, my dear?" addressing himself to his wife. - " Yes, (replied she) I think I do remember fomething of the fellow, but you know I " feldom converse with people of his station."-" Hoy day! (cried Joey) do yaw knaw the young "mon, coptain?"-"Know him, (faid Weazel) " many a time has he filled a glass of Burgundy for " me, at my lord Trippit's table."-"And what may "his neame be coptain," (faid Joey.) "His name!--"his name (replied Weazel) is Tom Rinfer."-"Waunds! (cried Joey) a has changed his own " neame then! for I'fe lay any wager he was christ-" ened John Trotter." - This observation raised the laugh against the captain, who seemed very much disconcerted; when Isaac broke silence, and faid, "It is no matter who or what he was, fince " he has not proved the robber we fuspected - And " we ought to blefs God for our narrow escape."-" Bless God, (said Weazel) bless the devil I for what? had he been a highywayman, I should have eat his blood, body and guts, before he had robbed " me, or any one in this Diligence."-" Ha, ha, ha! " (cried Miss Jenny) I believe you will eat all you "kill indeed, captain."—The usurer was fo well pleased at the event of this adventure, that he could not refrain from being fevere, and took notice that captain Weazel seemed to be a good Christian, for he had armed himself with patience and resignation, instead of carnal weapons; and worked out his falvation with fear and trembling. This piece of fatire occasioned a great deal of mirth at Weazel's expence,

pence, who muttered a great many oaths, and threatned to cut Isaac's throat;—the usurer taking hold
of this menace, said, "Gentlemen and ladies, I
"take you all to witness, that my life is in danger
"from this bloody-minded officer,—I'll have him
bound over to the peace." This second sneer, procured another laugh against him, and he remained
crest-fallen during the remaining part of our journey.

CHAP. XIII.

Strap and I are terrified by an apparition—
Strap's conjecture—the mystery explained by foey—we arrive at London—our dress and appearance described—we are insusted in the street—an adventure in an ale-house—we are imposed upon by a waggish footman—set to rights by a tobacconist—take lodgings—dive for a dinner—an accident at our ordinary.

TTE arrived at our inn, supped and went to bed; but Strap's distemper continuing, he was obliged to get up in the middle of the night, and taking the candle in his hand, which he had left burning for the purpose, he went down to the house of office, whence in a short time he returned in a great hurry, with his hair standing on end, and a look betokening horror and aftonishment. Without speaking a word, he set down the light and jumped into bed behind me, where he lay and trembled with great violence. When I asked him what was the matter? he replied with a broken accent, "God have mercy on us! I have feen the devil." -Though my prejudice was not quite fo strong as his, I was not a little alarmed at this exclamation, and much more fo, when I heard the found E 5

of bells approaching our chamber, and felt my bedfellow cling close to me, uttering these words " Christ " have mercy upon us! there he comes." - At that instant, a monstrous overgrown raven entered our chamber, with bells at his feet, and made directly towards our bed. - As this creature is reckoned in our country, a common vehicle for the devil and witches to play their pranks in, I verily believed we were haunted; and in a violent fright, shrunk under the bed-cloaths. This terrible apparition leapt upon the bed, and after giving us feveral fevere dabbs with its beak through the blankets, hopped away and vanished. Strap and I recommended ourselves to the protection of heaven with great devotion, and when we no longer heard the noise, ventured to peep up and take breath. But we had not been long freed from this phantom, when another appeared that had well nigh deprived us both of our fenses. We perceived an old man enter the room, with a long white beard that reached to his middle; there was a certain wild peculiarity in his eyes and countenance, that did not favour of this world: and his dress consisted of a brown stuff coat. buttoned behind and at the wrifts, and an odd fathioned cap of the same stuff upon his head. - I was foamazed that I had not power to move my eyes from fuch a ghaftly object, but lay motionless, and faw him come straight up to me : when he got to the bed he wrung his hands, and cried with a voice that did not feem to belong to a human creature, "Where is Ralph?" I made no reply; upon which he repeated in an accent still more preternatural; "Where is Ralpho?"-He had no fooner pronounced thefe words, than I heard the found of the bells at a distance; which the apparition having listned to, tript away, and left me almost petrified with fear. It was a good while before I could recover myfelf fo far as to fpeak: and when at length I turned to Strap, I found him in a fit, which however, did not

last long.—When he came to himself, I asked his opinion of what had happened; and he affured me that the first must certainly be the soul of some person damned, which appeared by the chains about its legs (for his fears had magnified the creature to the bigness of a horse, and the sound of small morrice bells to the clanking of maffy chains.) - As for the old man, he took it to be the spirit of somebody murdered long ago in this place, which had power granted it to torment the affaffin in the shape of a raven, and that Ralpho was the name of the faid murderer. - Although I had not much faith in this interpretation, I was too much troubled to enjoy any fleep; and in all my future adventures, never passed a night so ill. - In the morning, Strap imparted the whole affair to Joey, who, after an immoderate fit of laughter, explained the matter, by telling him the old man was the landlord's father, who had been an idiot some years, and diverted himself with a tame raven, which, it seems. had hopped away from his apartment in the night, and induced him to follow it to our chamber, where he had enquired after it, under the name of Ralpho.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which continued fix or feven days longer: At length we entered the great city, and lodged all night at the inn where the waggon put up.-Next morning, all the passengers parted different ways; while my companion and I fallied out to enquire for the member of parliament, to whom I had a letter of recommendation from Mr. Crab. As we had discharged our lodging at the inn, Strap took up our baggage, and marched behind me in the street with the knapfack on his back, as usual, so that we made a very whimsical appearance.-I had dreffed myfelf to the greatest advantage; that is, put on a clean ruffled shirt, and my best thread Rockings: my hair (which was of the deepest red) hung down upon my thoulders, as lank and ftreight as a pound of candles; and the skirts of my coat E 6 reached reached to the middle of my leg; my waiftcoat and breeches were of the same piece, and cut in the same tafte; and my hat very much refembled a barber's bafon in the shallowness of the crown and narrowness of the brims. Strap was habited in a much less aukward manner; but a short crop-eared wig that very much refembled Scrub's in the play, and the knapfack on his back, added to what is called a queer phiz, occasioned by a long chin, an hook nofe and high cheek bones, rendered him on the whole a very fit fubject of mirth and pleafantry. As we walked along, Strap, at my defire, enquired of a carman whom we met. whereabouts Mr. Cringer lived ; - and was answered by a stare accompanied with the word, "Anan!" Upon which I came up in order to explain the queftion, but had the misfortune to be unintelligible likewife, the carman damning us for a loufy Scotch guard, and whipping up his horses with a " Gee ho!" which nettled me to the quick, and roufed the indignation of Strap fo far, that after the fellow was gone a good way, he told me he would fight him for a farthing. - While we were deliberating upon what was to be done, an hackney coachman driving foftly along, and perceiving us standing by the kennel, came up close to us, and calling, " A coach, master!" by a dexterous management of the reins, made his horses stumble in the wet, and bedaub us all over with mud. -After which, he drove on, applauding himfelf with a hearty laugh, in which feveral people joined, to my great mortification; but one more compassionate than the rest seeing us strangers, advised me to go into an ale-house, and dry myself. I thanked him for his advice, which I immediately complied with; and going into the house he pointed out, called for a pot of beer, and fat down by a fire in the publick room. where we cleaned ourselves as well as we could.-In the mean time, a wag who fat in a box, smoaking his pipe, understanding by our dialect that we were

from Scotland, came up to me, and, with a grave countenance, asked how long I had been caught? As I did not know the meaning of his question. I made no answer; and he went on, faying, it could not be a great while; for my tail was not yet cut; at the fame time taking hold of my hair, and tipping the wink to the rest of the company, which seemed highly entertained with his wit. - I was incented at this usage, but afraid of resenting it, because I happened to be in a strange place, and perceived the person who spoke to me, was a brawny fellow, for whom I thought myself by no means a match. However. Strap having either more courage or less caution. could not put up with the infults that I fuffered; but told him in a peremptory tone, " He was an uncivil " fellow, for making fo free with his betters"-Whereupon, the wit going toward him, asked, What he had got in his knapfack ?" Is it oat-meal or brimstone, Sawney ? (said he) seizing him by the chin, which he shook to the inexpressible diversion. of all present.-My companion feeling himself assaulted in fuch an opprebrious manner, difengaged himfelf in a trice, and lent his antagonist such a box on the ear, as made him stagger to the other side of the room; and in a moment, a ring was formed for the combatants.—Seeing Strap beginning to strip, and my blood being heated with indignation, which banished all other thoughts, I undressed myself to the Ikin in an instant, and declared, that as the affront that occasioned the quarrel was offered to me, I would fight it out myfelf; upon which one or two cried out, "That's a brave Scotch boy; you shall " have fair play, by G-d.' This gave me fresh. fpirits, and going up to my adversary, who by his pale countenance did not feem much inclined to the battle. I ftruck him so hard on the stomach that he recled over a bench, and fell to the ground. Here I attempted to get a-top of him, in order to improve my fuccefs_

fuccess, according to the manner of my own country; but was restrained by the spectators, one of whom endeavoured to raise up my opponent, but in vain; for he protested he would not fight, not being quite recovered of a late illness.--- I was very well pleafed with this excuse, and immediately dressed myself, having acquired the good opinion of the company for my bravery, as well as my comrade Strap, who shook me by the hand, and wished me joy of the victory .---After having drank our pot, and dried our cloaths, we enquired of the landlord if he knew Mr. Cringer the member of parliament, and were amazed at his replying in the negative; for we imagined, he must be every bit as conspicuous here, as in the borough he represented; but he told us we might possibly hear of him as we passed along. - We betook ourselves therefore to the street, where, seeing a footman standing at a door, we made up to him, and asked if he knew where our patron lived ?- This member of the party-coloured fraternity, furveying us both very minutely, faid he knew Mr. Cringer very well, and bade us turn down the first street on our left, then turn to the right, and then to the left again, after which we would observe a lane, through which we must pass, and at the other end we should find an alley that leads to another street, where we should see the fign of the Thiftle and three Pedlars, and there he lodged .-- We thanked him for his information, and went forwards, Strap telling me, that he knew this person to be an honest friendly man by his countenance, before he opened his mouth; in which opinion I acquiefced, afcribing his good manners to the company he daily faw in the house where he ferved. We followed his directions punctually, in turning to the left and to the right and to the left again; but instead of feeing a lane before us, found ourselves at the side of the river, which perplexed us not a little; and my fellow-traveller ventured to pronounce, that we had certainly

certainly missed our way .-- By this time we were pretty much fatigued with our walk, and not knowing how to proceed, I went into a small snuff-shop hard by, encouraged by the fign of the highlander, where I found, to my inexpressible satisfaction, the shop-keeper was my countryman. - He was no fooner informed of our peregrination, and the directions we had received from the footman, than he informed us we had been imposed upon, telling us, Mr. Cringer lived in the other end of the town; and that it would be to no purpose for us to go thither to day, for by that time he was gone to the House.-I then asked him if he could recommend us to a lodging, which he readily did, by giving us a line to one of his acquaintance who kept a chandler's shop not far from St. Martin's Lane, here we hired a bed-room. up two pair of stairs, at the rate of 2s. per week. fo very small, that when the bed was let down, we were obliged to carry out every other piece of furniture that belonged to the apartment, and use the bedftead by way of chairs. - About dinner time, our landlord asked us how we proposed to live, to which we answered, that we would be directed by him.-"Well then (fays he) there are two ways of eating " in this town, for people of your condition; the one more creditable and expensive than the other: " the first, is to dine at an eating-house frequented by well-dreffed people only, and the other is called " diving, practifed by those who are either obliged or " inclined to live frugally."-- I gave him to understand that provided the last was not infamous, it would suit much better with our circumstances than the other -"Infamous (cried he) God forbid, there are many cre-"ditable people, rich people, ay and fine people, that " dive every day .-- I have feen many a pretty gentleman " with a laced waistcoat, dine in that manner, very " comfortably for three pence halfpenny, and go after-" wards to the coffee-house, where he made a figure

923

with the best lord in the land :- but your own ever 66 shall bear witness--I will go along with you to-day and introduce you."—He accordingly carried us to a certain lane, where stopping, he bade us observe him, and do as he did, and walking a few paces, dived into a cellar and disappeared in an instant. - I followed his example, and descending very successfully. found myself in the middle of a cook's shop, almost suffocated with the steams of boiled beef. and furrounded by a company of hackney-coachmen, chairmen, draymen, and a few footmen out of place or on board-wages; who fat eating thin of beef, tripe, cow-heel or faufages, at feparate boards, covered with cloths, which turned my stomach. - While I stood in amaze, undetermined whether to fit down or walk upwards again, Strap in hisdescent missing one of the steps, tumbled headlong into this infernal ordinary, and overturned the cook as the was carrying a porringer of foup to one of the guests: In her fall, she dashed the whole mess against the legs of a drummer belonging to the foot guards, who happened to be in her way, and scalded him so miserably, that he started up, and danced up and down, uttering a volley of execrations that made my hair stand on end. While he entertained the company in this manner, with an eloquence peculiar to himfelf, the cook got up, and after a hearty curfe on the poor author of this mischance, who lay under the table scratching his rump with a woful countenance, emptied a falt-feller in her hand, and ftripping down the patient's stocking which brought the fkin along with it, applied the contents to the fore.-This poultice was scarce laid on, when the drummer, who had begun to abate of his exclamation, broke forth into fuch a hideous yell, as made the whole company tremble; then feizing a pewter pint-pot that frood by him squeezed the sides of it together, asif it had been made of pliant leather, grinding his teeth

at the same time with a most horrible grin. Guessing the cause of this violent transport, I bade the woman wash off the falt, and bathe the part with oil, which she did, and procured him immediate ease. But here another difficulty occurred, which was no other than the landlady's infifting on his paying for the pot he had rendered useless. He swore he would pay for nothing but what he had eaten, and bid her be thankful for his moderation, or else he would prosecute her for damages .- Strap foreseeing the whole affair would lie at his door, promifed to fatisfy the cook, and called for a dram of gin to treat the drummer, which entirely appealed him, and composed all animolities. After this our landlord and we fat down at a board, and dined upon thin of beef most deliciously; our reckoning amounting to two pence halfpenny each, bread and small beer included.

CHAP: XIV.

We visit Strap's friend—a description of bim—bis advice—we go to Mr. Cringer's bouse—are denied admittance—an accident befals Strap—bis behaviour thereupon—an extraordinary adventure occurs, in the course of which I lose all my money.

In the afternoon, my companion proposed to call at his friend's house, which, we were informed, was in the neighbourhood, whither we accordingly went, and were so lucky as to find him at home. This gentleman, who had come from Scotland three or four years before, kept a school in town, where he taught the Latin, French and Italian languages; but what he chiefly professed was the pronunciation

of the English tongue, after a method more speedy and uncommon than any practifed heretofore; and indeed if his scholars spoke like their master, the latter part of his undertaking was certainly performed to a tittle; for although I could easily understand every word of what I had heard hitherto fince I entered England, three parts in four of his dialect were as unintelligible to me, as if he had spoke in Arabick or Irish.—He was a middle-fized man, and stooped very much, though not above the age of forty; his face was very much pitted with the small-pox, and his mouth extended from ear to ear. - He was dreffed in a night-gown of plaid, fastened about his middle with a ferjeant's old fash, and a tie-perriwig with a fore-top three inches high, in the fashion of king Charles the fecond's reign. - After he had received Strap (who was related to him) very courteously, he enquired of him, who I was: and being informed, took me by the hand, telling me, he was at school with my father. - When he understood my situation, he affured me that he would do me all the fervice in his power, both by his advice and otherwise; and while he spoke these words, eyed me with great attention, walking round me feveral times, and muttering, "OCh-ft! OCh-ft! fat a faight is here?" -I foon gueffed the reason of his ejaculation, and faid, "I suppose, Sir, you are not pleased with my " dress." - " Dress, (answered he) you may caal it " fat you please in your country, but I vaw to Gad, "tis a masquerade here. - No christian will admit fuch a figure into his hawfe -Upon my conscience! I wonder the dogs did not hunt you .- Did " you pass through St. James's market? - God bless " my eye-faight! you look like a coufin-german of "Ouran Outang."-I began to be a little ferious at this discourse, and asked him, if he thought I should obtain entrance tomorrow at the house of Mr. Cringer, on whom I chiefly depended, for an introduction on into business .-- "Mr. Cringer, Mr. Cringer (replied .. " he, fcratching his cheek) may be a very honest " gentleman - I know nothing to the contrary; but is " your fole dependance upon him? Who recom-" mended you to him?" - I pulled out Mr. Crab's letter, and told him the foundation of my hopes; at which he stared at me, and repeated, "OCh-st!" -I began to conceive bad omens from this behaviour of his, and begged he would affift me with his advice; which he promised to do very frankly; and as a specimen, directed us to a perriwig ware-house, in the neighbourhood, in order to be accommodated; laying strong injunctions on me not to appear before Mr. Cringer, till I had parted with these carroty locks, which (he faid) were fufficient to beget an antipathy against me, in all mankind. - And as we were going to pursue this advice, he called me back, and bade me be sure to deliver my letter into Mr. Cringer's own hand. As we walked along, Strap triumphed greatly in our reception with his friend, who (it feems) had affured him, he would in a day or two provide for him, with fome good mafter; and "now " (fays he) you shall see how I will fit you with a " wig .-- There's ne'er a barber in London (and that's " a bold word) can palm a rotten caul, or a penny-"weight of dead hair upon me."-And indeed this zealous adherent did wrangle fo long with the merchant, that he was defired twenty times to leave the shop, and see if he could get one cheaper elsewhere. At length I made choice of a good handsome bob, for which I paid ten shillings; and returned to our lodging, where Strap in a moment, rid me of that hair which had given the school-master so much offence.

We got up next day betimes, having been informed that Mr. Cringer gave audience by candle-light to all his dependants, he himself being obliged to attend the levée of my Lord Terrier, at break of day; because his lordship made one at the minister's between

eight and nine a clock-When we came to Mr. Cringer's door, Strap, to give me an instance of his politeness, ran to the knocker, which he employed so loud and fo long, that he alarmed the whole freet; and a window opening up two pair of stairs in the next house, a chamber-pot was discharged upon him fo fuccessfully, that the poor barber was wet to the skin, while I, being luckily at some distance, escaped the unfavoury deluge. - In the mean time a footman opening the door, and feeing no body in the ftreet but us, asked with a stern countenance, if it was I who made fuch a damned noise, and what I wanted .- I told him I had business with his master. whom I defired to fee. Upon which he clapped the door in my face, telling me, I must learn better manners before I could have access to his master. Vexed at this disappointment, I turned my resentment against Strap, whom I sharply reprimanded for his prefumption; but he not in the least regarding what I faid, wrung the urine out of his perriwig, and lifting up a large stone, flung it with such force against the ftreet door of that house from whence he had been bedewed, that the lock giving way, it flew wide open, and he took to his heels, leaving me to follow him as I could.-Indeed there was no time for deliberation; I therefore purfued him with all the speed I could exert, until we found ourselves, about the dawn, in a street we did not know. Here as we wandered along, gaping about, a very decent fort of a man, paffing by me, stopped of a sudden, and took up fomething, which having examined, he turned, and presented it to me with these words, "Sir, you "have dropt half a crown."—I was not a little furprized at this instance of honesty, and told him it did not belong to me; but he bade me recollect, and fee if all my money was fafe: upon which I pullel out my purse (for I had bought one since I came to town) and reckoning my money in my hand, which was now reduced to five guineas, feven shillings Tings and two pence, affured him I had loft nothing. -Well then, (fays he) fo much the better, -this is Godfend—and as you two were prefent when I of picked it up, you are entitled to equal shares with " me."-I was aftonished at these words, and looked upon this person to be a prodigy of integrity, but absolutely refused any part of the sum. -- " Come, " gentlemen, (said he) you are too modest-I see 46 you are strangers - but you shall give me leave to treat you with a whet this cold raw morning." -I would have declined this invitation, but Strap whispered to me, that the gentleman would be affronted, and I complied .- "Where shall we go? (faid " the stranger) I am quite ignorant of this part of " the town."-I informed him that we were in the fame fituation: Upon which he proposed to go into the first public house we should find open; and as we walked together, he began in this manner :- " I find by your tongues you are come from Scotland, gentlemen.—My grandmother by the father's fide " was of your country, which has prepoffelled me " fo much in its favour, that I never meet a Scotch-" man but my heart warms.—The Scots are a very brave people. — There is scarce a great family " in the kingdom that cannot boast of some ex-46 ploits performed by its ancestors many hundred " years ago. - There's your Douglasses, Gor-46 dons, Campbels, Hamiltons.-We have no fuch " ancient families here in England.—Then you are " all very well educated — I have known a pedlar 44 talk in Greek and Hebrew, as well as if they had " been his mother tongue - And for honefty - I once had a fervant, his name was Gregory Macgregor, "I would have trusted him with untold gold"-This eulogium on my native country, gained my affection fo strongly, that I believe I could have gone to death to ferve the author; and Strap's eyes fwain in tears. At length, as we passed through a dark narrow

narrow lane, we perceived a public house, which we entered; and found a man fitting by the fire, fmoaking a pipe, with a pint of purl before him. -- Our new acquaintance asked us, if ever we had drank egg. flip? To which we answering in the negative, he affured us of a regale, and ordered a quart to be prepared, calling for pipes and tobacco at the fame time. We found this composition very palatable, and drank heartily; the conversation (which was introduced by the gentlemen) turning upon the fnares that young unexperienced people are exposed to in this metropolis — He described a thousand cheats that are daily practifed upon the ignorant and unwary; and warned us of them with fo much goodnature and concern, that we bleffed the opportunity which threw us in his way. - After we had put the cann about for some time, our new friend began to yawn, telling us he had been up all night with a fick person; and proposed we should have recourse to fome diversion to keep him awake. - " Suppose (faid 46 he) we should take a hand at whist for pastime-66 But let me fee, that won't do, there's only three of us; and I cannot play at any other game - The " truth is, I feldom of never play, but out of com-" plaisance, or at such a time as this, when I am in "danger of falling afleep." ---- Although I was not much inclined to gaming, I felt no aversion to pass an hour or two at cards with a friend; and knowing that Strap understood as much of the matter as I, made no scruple of saying, "I wish we could find a " fourth hand." While we were in this perplexity, the person whom we found in the house at our entrance, over-hearing our discourse, took the pipe from his mouth very gravely, and accosted us thus: "Gentle-" men, my pipe is out you fee, (shaking the ashes into "the fire) and rather than you shouldbe baulked, I " don't care if I take a hand with you for a trifle,-" but remember I won't play for any thing of con-" fequence."

it

ty

g

ca

tu

or

CU

te

afl

" fequence." - We accepted his profer with pleasure; and having cut for partners, it fell to my lot to play with him, against our friend and Strap, for three pence a game. - We were fo fuccessful, that in a short time I was half a crown gainer; when the gentleman whom we had met in the street observing he had no luck to day, proposed to leave off, or change partners. - By this time I was inflamed with my good fortune and the expectation of improving it, as I perceived the two strangers plaid but indifferently: therefore I voted for giving him his revenge, with which he complied, after some intreaty, and cutting again, Strap and I (to our mutual fatisfaction) happened to be partners. - My good fortune attended me still, and in less than an hour, we had got thirty shillings of their money; for as they loft, they grew the keener and doubled stakes every time. At last the inconstant goddess began to veer about, and we were very foon stript of all our gains, and about forty shillings of our own money. This mortified me extremely, and had a visible effect on the muscles of Strap's face, which lengthened apace; but our antagonists perceiving our condition, kindly permitted us to retrieve our lofs, and confole ourselves with a new acquisition. Then my companion wisely fuggested it was time to be gone; upon which the perfon who had joined us in the house began to curse the cards; and muttered that we were indebted to fortune only for what we had got, no part of our fuccess being owing to our good play. This infinuation nettled me fo much, that I challenged him to continue the game for a crown; and he was with difficulty perfuaded to accept the invitation.—This contest ended in less than an hour, to my inexpressible affliction, who loft every shilling of my own money, Strap absolutely refusing to supply me with a fix-pence. -The gentleman, at whose request we had come in, perceiving by my disconsolate looks the situation of

my heart, which well nigh burfted with grief and re-Tentment, when the other stranger got up, and went away with my money; began in this manner: " I am truly afflicted at your bad luck, and would willingly repair it, was it in my power. But what in the name of goodness could provoke you to tempt your fate fo long? It is always a maxim 66 with gamesters to pursue success as far as it will co go, and to stop whenever fortune shifts about. You are a young man, and your passions too im-petuous; you must learn to govern them better: -However, there is no experience like that which is bought; you will be the better for this the longeft day you have to live.—As for the fellow who 66 has got your money, I don't half like him-Did or not you observe me tip you the wink, to leave off " in time?"-I answered, No. " No, (continued " he) you was too eager to mind any thing but the game.—But, harkee, (said he, in a whisper) are you fatisfied of that young man's honesty? his looks are a little suspicious; -but I may be mistaken; he made a great many grimaces while he of flood behind you; —this is a very wicked town." I told him I was very well convinced of my comrade's integrity, and that the grimaces he mentioned were doubtless owing to his anxiety at my loss .- " O ho! if that be the case, I ask his pardon.—Landlord, " fee what's to pay."—The reckoning amounted to eighteen pence, which having discharged, the gentleman shook us both by the hand, and faying he should be very glad to fee us again, departed.

\$0000000¢ & \$00000000

CHAP. XV.

Strap moralizes—presents bis purse to me—we inform our landlord of my misfortune; be unravels the mystery—I present myself to Cringer—be recommends and turns me over to Mr. Staytape—I, become acquainted with a fellow-dependant, who explains the characters of Cringer and Staytape—and informs me of the method to be pursued at the Navy-office and Surgeon's-ball-—Strap is employed.

N our way to our lodging, after a profound filence on both fides, Strap with a hideous groan observed, that we had brought our pigs to a fine market. To this I made no reply, and he went on: God fend us well out of this place, we have not been in London eight and forty hours and I be-" lieve we have met with eight and forty thousand " misfortunes. - We have been jeered, reproached, " buffeted, piffed upon, and at last stript of our " money; and I suppose by and by we shall be stript " of our skins. - Indeed as to the money-part of it " that was owing to our own folly; Solomon, fays, " Bray a fool in a mortar, and he will never be wife. "Ah! God help us, an ounce of prudence is worth " a pound of gold." This was no time for him to tamper with my disposition, already mad with my loss, and inflamed with refentment against him, who had refused me a little money to attempt to retrieve it. I therefore turned towards him with a stern countenance, and asked, "Who he called fool!" Being altogether unaccustomed to such looks from me, he VOL. I. flood

stood still and stared in my face for some time; then, with fome confusion, uttered " Fool !- I called no " body fool but myfelf; - I am fure I am the greatest " fool of the two, for being fo much concerned at " other people's misfortunes; - but Nemo omnibus so horis fapit .- that's all-that's all."-Upon which a filence enfued that brought us to our lodging, where I threw myfelf upon the bed in an agony of despair, resolved to perish, rather than apply to my companion or any other body for relief; but Strap, who knew my temper, and whose heart bled within him at my diffress, after some pause, came to the bed-fide, and putting a leathern-purse into my hand. burft into tears, crying, "I know what you think ! but I fcorn your thoughts .- There's all I have in " the world, take it, and I'll perhaps get more for " you before that be done. - If not, I'll beg for " you, steal for you, go through the wide world with you, and starve with you, for though I be " a poor cobler's fon, I am no fcout."—I was fo touched with the generous paffion of this poor creature, that I could not refrain from weeping also, and we mingled our tears together for fome time.-Upon examining the purse, I found in it two half guineas and half a crown, which I would have returned to him, faying, he knew better than I how to manage it; but he absolutely refused my proposal, and told me, it was more reasonable and decent that he should depend upon me who was a gentleman, than that I should be controuled by him.

After this friendly contest was over, and our minds more at ease, we informed our landlord of what had happened to us, taking care to conceal the extremity to which we were reduced: He no fooner heard the story, than he assured us we had been grievously imposed upon by a couple of sharpers, who were associates; and that this polite, honest, friendly, humane person, who had treated us

fo civilly, was no other than a rascally Moneydropper, who made it his business to decoy strangers in that manner, to one of his own haunts, where an accomplice or two were always waiting to affift in pillaging the prey he had run down.-Here the good man recounted a great many stories of people who had been feduced, cheated, pilfered, beat,nay, even murdered by fuch villains. I was confounded at the artifice and wickedness of mankind. and Strap lifting up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from fuch fcenes of iniquity; for furely the devil had fet up his throne in London. - Our landlord being curious to know what reception we had met with at Mr. Cringer's. we acquainted him with the particulars, at which he shook his head, and told us, we had not gone the right way to work; that there was nothing to be done with a m-b-r of p-m-t without a bribe; that the fervant was commonly infected with the mafter's difease, and expected to be paid for his work, as well as his betters.—He therefore advised me to give the footman a shilling the next time I defired admittance to my patron, or elfe I should scarce find an opportunity to deliver my letter. Aecordingly, next morning, when the door was opened, I flipt a shilling into his hand, and told him I had a letter for his mafter. - I found the good effects of my liberality; for the fellow let me in immediately, and taking the letter out of my hand, defired me to wait in a kind of passage, for an answer. In this place I continued standing three quarters of an hour, during which time I faw a great many young fellows, whom I formerly knew in Scotland. pass and repass, with an air of familiarity in their way to and from the audience chamber; while I was fain to stand shivering in the cold, and turn my back to them, that they might not perceive the the lownels of my condition. - At length, Mr.

Cringer came out to fee a young gentleman to the door, who was no other than fquire Gawky, dreffed in a very gay fuit of cloaths: At parting Mr. Cringer shook him by the hand, and told him he hoped to have the pleasure of his company at dinner. Then turning about towards me, asked what were my commands: when he understood I was the perfon who had brought the letter from Mr. Crab, he affected to recollect my name, which however, he pretended he could not do, till he had confulted the letter again; to fave him that trouble, I told him my name was Random. - Upon which he went on, " Ay, ay, Random, Random, Random-I think "I remember the name;" and very well he might, for this very individual Mr. Cringer had many a time rode before my grand father's cloak-bag, in quality of footman. - " Well, (fays he) you proof pole to go on board a man of war, as furgeon's " mate." To which I replied by a low bow. " I believe it will be a difficult matter (continued he) to procure a warrant, there being already fuch a warm of Scotch furgeons at the navy-office, in expectation of the next vacancy, that the commissioners are afraid of being torn in pieces, and " have actually applied for a guard to protect them. -However, some ships will soon be put in com-" mission, and then we shall see what's to be done." -So faying, he left me exceedingly mortified at the different reception Mr. Gawky and I had met with from this upftart, proud, mean member, who (I imagined) would have been glad of an opportunity to be grateful for the obligations he owed to my

tı

a

11

tr

ta

m

he

to

fig

W

in

At my return, I was furprized with the agreeable news of Strap's being employed on the recommendation of his friend the school-master, by a perriwig-maker in the neighbourhood, who allowed him five shillings per week, besides bed and board, -I continued to dance attendance every other morning at the levée of Mr. Cringer, during a fortnight, in which time I became acquainted with a young fellow of my own country and profession, who also depended on the member's interest; but was treated with much more respect than I, both by the servants and mafter, being often admitted into a parlour, where there was a fire, for the convenience of the better fort of those who waited for him.-Thither I was never permitted to penetrate on account of my appearance, which was not at all fashionable; but was obliged to ftand blowing my fingers in a cold lobby, and take the first opportunity of Mr. Cringer's going to the door, to fpeak with him.-One day, while I enjoyed this occasion, a person was introduced, whom Mr. Cringer no fooner faw, than running towards him, he faluted him with a bow to the very ground, and afterwards shaking him by the hand with great heartiness and familiarity, called him his good friend, and asked very kindly after Mrs. Staytape, and the young ladies; then, after a whisper which continued some minutes, wherein I over-heard the word Honour repeated feveral times with great emphasis, Mr. Cringer introduced me to this gentleman, as to a person whose advice and affiftance I might depend upon, and having given me his direction, followed me to the door, where he told me, I need not give myself the trouble to call at his house any more, for Mr. Staytape would do my bufiness for me. At that instant my fellow dependant coming out after me, overheard the discourse of Mr. Cringer, and making up to me in the street, accosted me very civilly: I his I looked upon as no fmall honour, confidering the figure he made; for he was dreffed in a blue frock with a gold button, a green filk waiftcoat trimmed with gold, black velvet breeches, white filk stock. ings, filver buckles, a gold laced hat, a spencer wig,

add,I

and a filver hilted hanger, with a fine clouded cane in his hand.-" I perceive (fays he) you are but " lately come from Scotland :- pray what may your " business with Mr. Cringer be?-I suppose it is os no fecret-and I may possibly give you some ad-46 vice that will be ferviceable; for I have been " furgeon's fecond mate on board of a feventy-gun " fhip, and confequently know a good deal of the " world."-I made no scruple to disclose my situation, which when he had learned, he shook his head, and told me he had been pretty much in the fame circumstances about a year ago; that he had relied on Cringer's promises so long, that his money (which was confiderable) as well as his credit, was quite exhausted; and when he wrote to his relations for a fresh supply, instead of money, he received nothing but reproaches, and the epithets of idle, debauched fellow: That after he had waited at the navy-office many months for a warrant to no purpose, he was fain to pawn some of his cloaths, which raifed a fmall fum, wherewith he bribed the f-t-y, who foon procured a warrant for him, notwithstanding he had affirmed the same day, that there was not one vacancy. - That he had gone on board, where he remained nine months; at the end of which the thip was put out of commission, and the company were to be paid off in Broad-street the very next day. - That his relations being reconciled to him, had charged him to pay his devoirs regularly to Mr. Cringer, who had informed them by letter, that his interest alone had procured the warrant; in obedience to which command, he came to his levée every morning as I faw, though he looked upon him to be a very pitiful scoundrel.-In conelufion, he asked me if I had yet passed at Surgeon's-Hall? To which I answered, I did not so much as know it was necessary-" Necessary! (cried he) O 55 Bord, O Lord! I find I must instruct you -come " along

le

m

s along with me, and I'll give you fome informa-"tion about that matter." - So faying, he carried me into an ale-house, where he called for some beer and bread and cheese, on which we breakfasted. While we fat in this place, he told me I must first go to the navy-office, and write to the board, defiring them to order a letter for me to the Surgeon's-Hall, that I may be examined touching my skill in furgery: That the furgeons, after having examined me, would give me my qualification fealed up in form of a letter directed to the commissioners, which qualification I must deliver to the secretary of the board, who would open it in my presence, and read the contents. After which, I must employ my interest to be provided for as soon as possible. - That the expence of his qualification for fecond mate of a third rate, amounted to thirteen shillings, exclufive of the warrant, which coft him half a guinea and half a crown, befides the prefent to the feeretary, which consisted of a three pound twelve piece. This calculation was like a thunder-bolt to me, whose whole fortune did not amount to twelve shillings. - I accordingly made him acquainted with this part of my diffres, after having thanked him for his information and advice. He condoled me on this occasion; but bad me be of good chear, for he had conceived a friendship for me, and would make all things eafy.—'Tis true he was run out at prefent, but to-morrow or next day he was certain of receiving a confiderable fum; of which he would lend me what would be fufficient to answer my exigences. This frank declaration pleafed me fo much, that I pulled out my purse and emptied it before him, begging him to take what he pleafed for pocket expence until he should receive his own money.-With a good deal of preffing he was prevailed upon to take five shillings, telling me that he might have what money he wanted at any time for F 4 the

0

d

1-

sas

ne

ng

the trouble of going into the city; but as he had met with me, he would defer his going thither till to morrow, when I should go along with him, and he would put me in a way of acting for myfelf, without a fervile dependance on that rafcal Cringer, much less on the loufy taylor to whom I heard him turn you over .- " How (cried 1) is Mr. Staytape " a taylor?"-" No less, I'll affure you (answer'd " he) and I confess, more likely to serve you than " the member: For provided you can entertain " him with politics and conundrums, you may have " credit with him for as many and as rich cloaths " as you pleafe."-I told him, I was utterly ignorant of both, and fo incens'd at Cringer's ufage, that I would never fet foot within his door again. - After a good deal more conversation, my new acquaintance and I parted, having made an appointment to meet next day at the same place, in order to fet out for the city. - I went immediately to Strap, and related every thing which had happen'd, but he did not at all approve of my being so forward to lend money to a stranger, especially as we had been already fo much impos'd upon by appearances. " However (faid he) if you are fure he is a Scotchman, I believe you are fafe." en to about the grant of an full tod a nonseque in

the received a figuralists for ever intervoid rules.

Service early, _*Tis encesses are received as a service of the continuous encesses and the received of the continuous encesses and the rule encesses and the rule encesses and the rule of the figural and the rule of the figural of the rule o

money. With a good deal of predict he was rive valled up in the valled up in to cake five five follows, teleng me that so my he winted at any tlass for

tel discolated white the control of the charteness descent

CHAP. XIV.

vanity.

My new acquaintance breaks an appointment—

I proceed, by myself, to the Navy-office—
address myself to a person there, who assists
me with his advice—write to the board—
they grant me a letter to the Surgeons at
the Hall—I am informed of the beau's
name and character—find him—he makes
me his consident in an amour—desires me
to pawn my linen, for his occasions—I
recover what I lent him—fome curious
observations of Strap on that occasion—his

IN the morning I got up and went to the place of rendezvous, where I waited two hours in vain : and was so exasperated against him for breaking his appointment, that I fet out for the city by myself. in hopes of finding the villain and being revenged on him for his breach of promise. - At length I found myself at the Navy-Office, which I entered. and faw crowds of young fellows walking below many of whom made no better appearance than myfelf-I confulted the philiognomy of each, and at last made up to one whose countenance I lik'd; and asked, if he could instruct me in the form of the letter which was to be fent to the board, to obtain an order for examination: He answered me in broad Scotch, that he would shew me the copy of what he had wrote for himself, by the direction of another who knew the form: and accordingly pulled it out of his pocket for my perufal; and told me, that if I

was expeditious, I might fend it in to the board before dinner, for they did no business in the afternoon. He then went with me to a coffee-house hard by, where I wrote the letter, which was immediately delivered to the messenger; who told me, I might expect an order to-morrow about the fame time. - Having transacted this piece of business, my mind was a good deal compos'd; and as I had met with fo much civility from this stranger, I defired further acquaintance with him, fully resolved however, not to be deceived by him so much to my prejudice as I had been by the beau-He agreed to dine with me at the cook's shop which I frequented; and on our way thither, carried me to 'Change, where I was in some hopes of finding Mr. Tackson (for that was the name of the person who had broke his appointment)-- I fought him there to no purpose, and on our way towards the other end of the town. imparted to my companion his behaviour towards me: Upon which, he gave me to understand, that he was no stranger to the name of beau Jackson (so he was called at the Navy-Office) altho' he did not know him personally; that he had the character of a goodnatur'd careless fellow, who made no scruple of borrowing from any body that would lend; that most people who knew him, believed he had a good principle at the bottom; but his extravagance was fuch. he would probably never have it in his power to manifest the honesty of his intention. - This account made me fweat for my five shillings, which I nevertheless did not altogether despair of recovering, provided I could find out the debtor .- This young man likewife added another circumstance of Squire Jackfon's history, which was, that being destitute of all means to equip him for fea, when he receiv'd his last warrant, he had been recommended to a person who tent him a little money, after he had figned a will and power, entitling that person to lift his wages when they should become due, as also to inherit his effects in case of his death -- That he was still under the tutorage and direction of that gentleman, who advanced him fmall fums from time to time upon this fecurity. at the rate of 50 per cent. But at present his credit was very low, because his funds would do little more than pay what he had already receiv'd, this moderate interest included. - After the stranger (whose name was Thomson) had entertained me with this account of Jackson, he inform'd me that he himself had passed for third mate of a third rate, about four months ago; fince which time, he had constantly attended at the Navy-Office, in hopes of a warrant, having been affur'd from the beginning, both by a Scotch member and one of the commissioners to whom the member recommended him, that he should be put into the first vacancy; notwithstanding which pro mife, he had the mortification to fee fix or feven appointed in the same station almost every week-that now being utterly impoverish'd, his fole hope confifted in the promise of a friend lately come to town, to lend him a small matter, for a present to the f--t--y; without which he was perfuaded he might wait a thousand years to no purpose. - I conceived a mighty liking for this young fellow, which (I believe) proceeded from the similitude of our fortunes: We fpent the whole day together; and as he lived at Wapping, I defired him to take a share of my bed .-Next day we returned to the Navy-Office, where, after being called before the board, and question'd about the place of my nativity and education, they ordered a letter to be made out for me, which, upon paying half a crown to the clerk, I receiv'd, and deliver'd into the hands of the clerk at Surgeon's-Hall, together with a shilling for his trouble in registering my name. By this time my whole stock was diminished to two shillings, and I saw not the least prospect of relief, even for present subsistence, much less to enable me to pay the fees at Surgeon's-Hall, for my

my examination, which was to happen in a fortnight. - In this state of perplexity, I consulted Strap, who affured me, he would pawn every thing he had in the world, even to his razors, before I should want: but this I absolutely rejected, telling him, I would a thousand times rather list for a soldier, of which I had some thoughts, than be any longer a burden to him. - At the word foldier, he grew pale as death, and begged on his knees, I would think no more of that scheme. "God preserve us all in our right wits! " (cried he) would you turn foldier, and perhaps be " fent abroad against the Spaniards, where you must " fland and be shot at like a woodcock?-Heaven " keep cold lead out of my carcafs! and let me die " in a bed like a christian, as all my forefathers have done. - What fignifies all the riches and honours of " this life, if one enjoys not content-And in the e next, there is no respect of persons. Better be a of poor honest barber with a good conscience, and " time to repent of my fins upon my death bed, than be cut off (God bless us) by a musket shot, " as it were in the very flower of one's age, in the pursuit of riches and fame. - What fignifies riches (my dear friend!) do they not make unto them-" felves wings, as the wife-man faith; and does not "Horace observe, " Non domus aut fundus, non aris acervus aut auri Egroto domini deduxit corpore febrem, non animo curas. - I could moreover mention many other fayings in contempt of riches, both from the bible and other good books; but as "I know you are not very fond of those things, I " shall only affure you, that if you take on to be a " foldier, I will do the fame; and then if we should both be flain, you will not only have your own " blood to answer for, but mine also: And peradwe venture the lives of all those whom we shall kill in " battle. Therefore I pray you, confider whether " you will fit down contented with small things,

and share the fruits of my industry in peace, till " providence shall send better tidings; or by your "despair, plunge both our souls and bodies into ever-" lasting perdition, which God of his infinite mer-" cy forbid." - I could not help finiling at this harangue, which was delivered with great earnestness, the tears standing in his eyes all the time; and promifed to do nothing of that fort without his confent and concurrence. - He was much comforted with this declaration; and told me, in a few days he should receive a week's wages which should be at my fervice. but advised me in the mean time, to go in quest of Jackson, and recover, if possible, what he had borrow'd of me - I accordingly trudg'd about from one end of the town to the other, for feveral days, without being able to learn any thing certain concerning him: And, one day, being extremely hungry and allur'd by the steams that regal'd my nostrils from a boiling cellar, I went down with an intention to gratify my appetite with two-penny worth of beef; when, to my no small surprize, I found Mr. Jackson sitting at dinner with a footman--He no sooner perceiv'd me than he got up, and shook me by the hand, faying, "He was " glad to fee me, for he intended to have call'd at my " lodgings in the afternoon." -I was fo well pleas'd with this rencounter, and the apologies he made for not keeping his appointment, that I forgot my refentment. and fat down to dinner with the happy expectation of not only recovering my own money before we should part, but also of reaping the benefit of his promise to lend me wherewithal to pass examination; and this my fanguine complexion fuggested, tho' the account Thomson gave me of him, ought to have moderated my expectation .-- When we had feafted fumptuoufly. he took his leave of the footman, and adjourned with me to an ale-house hard by, where, after shaking me by the hand again, he began thus, " I suppose you think me a fad dog, Mr. Random, and I do conworld is

fels that appearances are against me--But I dare 46 fay you will forgive me when I tell you, my not coming at the time appointed, was owing to a " peremptory message, I receiv'd from a certain lady, " whom---harkee (but this is a great fecret) I am to marry very foon---You think this strange perhaps, " but it is not lefs true for all that --- a five thousand co pounder, I'll affure you, besides expectations---" For my own part, devil take me if I know what " any woman can fee engaging about me---but a whim you know, - and then one would not baulk one's good fortune---You faw that footman who din'd with us---he's one of the honesteft " fellows that ever wore livery--You must know, it was by his means, I was introduced to her, for " he made me first acquainted with her woman, who is his miftrefs---ay, many a crown has he and his " fweet-heart had of my money---but what of that! " things are now brought to a bearing --- I have---(come a little this way) I have propos'd marriage, " and the day is fix'd--- fhe's a charming creature! " and writes like an angel--- O Lord | the can ree peat all the English tragedies as well as e'er a player in Drury-Lane; and indeed is fo fond of plays that to be near the stage, she has taken lodgings in a court hard by the theatre--- But you shall fee---" you shall fee-- here's the last letter she fent me."---With these words he put it into my hand, and I read Ito the best of my remembrance) as follows:

" Deer Kreeter,

A Syou are the animable hopjack of my contemplay thins, your aydear is infernally thinming before my keymerycal fansee, when Murfy sends his puppies to the heys of slipping mortals; and when Febus shines from his merrydying throne: Whereupon, I shall canseeif old whorie time has lost his pinners, as also Cubit his harrows, until

thou enjoy fweet propose in the loasseek harms of thy faithfool to commend,

"Wingar-yeard Droory-lane, "CLAYRENDER."

While I was reading, he feemed to be in an extafy, rubbing his hands, and burfting out into fits of laughter; at last he caught hold of my hand, and fqueezing it, cried, "There is stile for you! what "do you think of this billet doux?" I answer'd, "It might be fublime for ought I knew, for it was " altogether above my comprehension."-" O ho! " (faid he) I believe it is-both tender and fublime " - she's a divine creature! and so doats upon me! Let me fee-what shall I do with this money. " when I have once got it into my hands? - In the if first place I shall do for you-I'm a man of few " words—but, fay no more—that's determin'd—
"Whether would you advise me to purchase some " post, by which I may rise in the state; or lay out my wife's fortune in land and retire to the country " at once?" I gave my opinion without helitation, that he could not do better than buy an estate and improve it; especially since he had already seen so much of the world. Then I launch'd out into the praises a country life, as describ'd by the poets whose works I had read-He feem'd to relish my advice, but withal told me, that although he had feen a great deal of the world both at land and fea, having cruiz'd three whole months in the channel, yet he should not be fatisfied until he had visited France, which he propos'd to do before he should settle; and to carry his wife along with him. - I had nothing to object to his propofal; and ask'd, how foon he hop'd to be happy.--" As to that (he replied) nothing obstructs my hap-" piness, but the want of a little ready cash-for you must know, my friend in the city has gone " out of town for a week or two; and I unfortu-66 nately missed my pay at Broad-street, by being

" detain'd too long by the dear charmer-but there " will be a recal at Chatham next week, whither " the ship's books are fent, and I have commission'd " a friend in that place to receive the money." - " If "that be all (faid I) there's no great harm in defer-ring your marriage a few days."—"Yes, faith! but "there is (faid he) you don't know how many rivals "I have who would take all advantages against me " -- I would not baulk the impatience of her paffion " for the world - the least appearance of coldness and " indifference would ruin all: and fuch offers don't " occur every day." I acquiesc'd in this observation, and enquir'd how he intended to proceed: At this he rubb'd his chin, and faid, "Why, truly I " must be oblig'd to some friend or other do you " know nobody that would lend me a small fum for " a day or two?" -- I affur'd him, I was fuch an utter stranger in London, that I did not believe I could borrow a guinea if my life depended upon it. - " No " (faid he) that's hard that's hard - I wish I had any thing to pawn - upon my foul, you have got excellent linen (feeling the fleeve of my fhirt) how many shirts of that kind have you got?"-I anfwer'd, " fix ruffled and fix plain." -- At which he teffified great furprize, and fwore that no gentleman ought to have more than four-" How many d'ye think I have got (continued he;) but this and another as I hope to be fav'd! - I dare fay we " shall be able to raise a good fum out of your super-" fluity let me fee - let me fee - each of thefe shirts are worth fixteen shillings at a moderate computation - now suppose we pawn them for half priceeight times eight is fixty-four, that's three pounds four z - ds! that will do- give me your hand" " - " Softly, foftly, Mr. Jackfon (faid I) don't dispose of my linen without my confent : first pay me the crown you owe me, and then we shall u talk of other matters."—He protested he had not Taki W above o'nimb

above one shilling in his pocket, but that he would pay me out of the first of the money raised from the shirts -This piece of affurance incenfed me fo much, that I fwore I would not part with him until I had received fatisfaction for what I had lent him, and as for the fhirts I would not pawn one of them to fave him from the gallows. - At this expression he laughed aloud. and then complained, it was damned hard, that I fhould refuse him a trifle, that would infallibly enable him not only to make his own fortune, but mine alfo. - "You talk of pawning my thirts (faid I) sup-" pose you should sell this hanger, Mr. Jackson? I " believe it would fetch a good round fum." - " No. " hang it (faid he) I can't appear decently without " my hanger, or agad it should go." However seeing me inflexible with regard to my linen, he at length -unbuckled his hanger, and shewing me the fign of the three blue balls, defired me to carry it thither and pawn it for two guineas. This office I would by no means have performed, had I feen any likelihood of having my money otherwise; but not willing, out of a piece of false delicacy, to neglect the only opportunity I sh uld, perhaps, ever have, I ventured into a pawn-broker's shop, where I demanded two guineas on the pledge, in the name of Thomas Williams .- "Two guineas, (faid the pawn-broker, looking at the hanger) this piece of goods has been " here feveral times before for thirty shillings; how-" ever, fince I believe the gentleman to whom it 66 belongs will redeem it, he shall have what he wants;" and accordingly he paid me the money, which I carried to the house where I had left Jackson, and calling for change, counted out to him feven and thirty shillings, reserving the other five for myself. After looking at the money fome time he faid, "D -n " it! it don't fignify—this won't do my business; " fo you may as well take half a guinea or a whole " one, as the five shillings you have kept."- I thankolder &

ed him kindly, but refused to accept of any more than was my due, because I had no prospect of repaying it -- Upon which he stared in my face, and told me, I was excessively raw, or I would not talk in that manner.—" Blood! (cried he) I have a very bad opinion of a young fellow who won't borrow of his friend, when he's in want-'tis the fign of " a fneaking spirit, --- Come, come, Random, give " me back the five shillings, and take this half gui-" nea, and if ever you are able to pay me, I believe " you will; if not, d-n me if ever I alk it."-When I reflected on my present necessity, I suffered myfelf to be perfuaded, and after making my acknowledgements to Mr. Jackson, who offered to treat me with a play, I returned to my lodgings with a much better opinion of this gentleman than I had in the morning: and at night imparted my day's adventure to Strap, who rejoiced at my good luck, faying, "I told you, if he was a Scotchman you was " fafe enough—and who knows but this marriage se may make us all - You have heard, I suppose, as how a countryman of ours, a journeyman baker, " ran away with a great lady of this town, and now " keeps his coach - Ecod! I fay nothing; but yef-" terday morning as I was thaving a gentleman at " his own house, there was a young lady in the " room---a fine buxom wench, i' faith! and fhe " threw fo many sheep's eyes at a certain person, " whom I shall not name, that my heart went knock, " knock, knock, like a fulling mill, and my hand 66 fh --- fhook fo much that I fliced a piece of fkin off the gentleman's nofe; whereby he fwore a "deadly oath, and was going to horsewhip me, " when the prevented him, and made my peace .---66 Omen baud malum! Is not a journeyman barber as 66 good as a journeyman baker? The only difference is, the baker uses flower for the belly, and the bar-46 ber uses it for the head : and as the head is a more " noble noble member than the belly, so is a barber more or noble than a baker---for what's the belly without " the head ?---Besides, I am told he could neither " read nor write; now you know I can do both; "And moreover speak Latin .-- But I will say no " more, for I despise vanity -- nothing is more vain than vanity." --- With these words he pulled out of his pocket a wax candle's end, which he applied to his forehead; and upon examination, I found he had combed his own hair over the toupee of his wig, and was indeed in his whole dress become a very fmart shaver .-- I congratulated him on his prospect with a fatirical fmile, which he understood very well; and shaking his head, observed I had very little faith, but the truth would come to light in spite of my incredulity.

CHAP. XVII.

I go to Surgeon's-ball, where I meet with Mn.

Jackson—am examined—a fierce dispute arises between two of the examiners—Jackson disguises himself to attract respect—is detected—in hazard of heing sent to Bridewell—be treats us at a tavern—carries us to a night-house—a troublesome adventure there—we are committed to the Round-house—carried before a Justice—bis behaviour.

who gave me almost all the money he earned, I preserved my half guinea entire, till the day of examination, when I went with a quaking heart to Surgeon's-hall, in order to undergo that ceremony.

mony. - Among a croud of young fellows who walked in the outward hall, I perceived Mr Jackfon, to whom I immediately went up, and enquiring into the state of his amour, understood it was still undetermined by reason of his friend's abfence, and the delay of the recal at Chatham, which put it out of his power to bring it to a conclusion. -I then asked what his business was in this place: to which he replied, he was refolved to have two strings to his bow, that in case the one failed he might use the other; and with this view, he was to pass that night for a higher qualification. - At that instant a young fellow came out from the place of examination, with a pale countenance, his lip quivering, and his looks as wild as if he had feen a ghost, -He no sooner appeared, than we all slocked about him with the utmost eagerness to know what reception he had met with; which (after fome pause) he described, recounting all the questions they had asked, with the answers he made. In this manner we obliged no less than twelve to recapitulate, which, now the danger was past, they did with pleasure; before it fell to my lot: At length the beadle called my name, with a voice that made me tremble as much as if it had been the last trumpet: However, there was no remedy, I was conducted into a large hall, where I faw about a dozen of grim faces fitting at a long table. One of whom bad me come forward in fuch an imperious tone, that I was actually for a minute or two bereft of my fenfes. - The first question he put to me was, "Where was you born?" To which I answered, In Scotland .- " In Scotland (faid he) I know that very well-we have fcarce any other countrymen " to examine here—you Scotchmen have overspread " us of late as the locusts did Egypt:-I ask you " in what part of Scotland was you born?"-I named the place of my nativity, which he had never before heard of: He then proceeded to interrogate me

me about my age, the town where I ferved my time, with the term of my apprenticeship; and when I had informed him that I ferved three years only, he fell into a violent passion; swore it was a shame and a scandal to send such raw boys into the world as furgeons; that it was great prefumption in me, and an affront upon the English, to pretend to sufficient skill in my business, having served so short a time, when every apprentice in England was bound feven years at least; -that my friends would have done better if they had made me a weaver or shoemaker, but their pride would have me a gentleman (he fupposed) at any rate, and their poverty could not afford the necessary education.-This exordium did not at all contribute to the recovery of my spirits, but on the contrary, reduced me to fuch a fituation that I was scarce able to stand; which being perceived by a plump gentleman, who fat opposite to me, with a skull before him, he said Mr. Snarler was too fevere upon the young man; and turning towards me, told me, I need not to be afraid, for no body would do me any harm; then biding me take time to recollect myself, he examined me touching the operation of the trepan, and was very well fatisfied with my answers.—The next person who questioned me was a wag, who began by asking if I had ever feen amputation performed; to which I replying in the affirmative, he shook his head and faid, "What! upon a dead subject, I suppose? If " (continued he) during an engagement at fea, a " man should be brought to you with his head shot " off, how would you behave?"-After some hefitation, I owned, fuch a case had never come under my observation; neither did I remember to have feen any method of cure proposed for such an -accident, in any of the systems of surgery I had perused. Whether it was owing to the simplicity of my answer, or the archness of the question, I know not. - 33

not, but every member at the board deigned to fmile, except Mr. Snarler, who feemed to have very little of the animal rifibile in his constitution—The facetious member, encouraged by the fuccess of his last joke, went on thus: " Suppose you was called " to a patient of a plethoric habit, who had been " bruised by a fall, what would you do?" I anfwered, I would bleed him immediately. "What, (faid he) before you had tied up his arm ?"-But this stroke of wit not answering his expectation, he defired me to advance to the gentleman who fat next him; and who with a pert air, asked what method of cure I would follow in wounds of the intestines.—I repeated the method of cure as it is prescribed by the best chirurgical writers; which he heard to an end, and then faid with a fupercilious finile, "So, you think with fuch treatment the " patient might recover?"-I told him I faw nothing to make me think otherwise .- " That may " be, (resumed he) I won't answer for your forefight;—but did you ever know a case of this kind fucceed?" I acknowledged I did not; and was about to tell him I had never feen a wounded intestine; but he stopt me, by saying with some precipitation, " nor never will.—I affirm, that all wounds of the intestines, whether great or small, " are mortal." - " Pardon me, brother ffays the se fat gentleman) there is very good authority"-Here he was interrupted by the other, with "Sir, excuse me, I despise all authority. - Nullius in " verba .- I stand upon my own bottom."-" But, "Sir, Sir, (replied his antagonist) the reason of the "thing shews"-" A fig for reason (cried this suf-" ficient member) I laugh at reason, give me ocu-" lar demonstration." - The corpulent gentleman began to wax warm, and observed that no man acquainted with the anatomy of the parts, would advance fuch an extravagant affertion, - This inuendo

1

enraged the other so much, that he started up, and in a furious tone exclaimed: "What Sir! do you " question my knowledge in anatomy?"-By this time, all the examiners had espoused the opinion of one or other of the disputants, and raised their voices all together, when the chairman commanded filence and ordered me to withdraw. In less than a quarter of an hour, I was called in again, and received my qualification fealed up, and was ordered to pay five shillings .- I laid down my half-guinea upon the table, and stood some time, until one of them bad me begone; to this I replied, I will, when I have got my change; upon which another threw me five shillings and fix-pence, faying, I would not be a true Scotchman if I went away without my change. I was afterwards obliged to give three shillings and fix-pence to the beadles, and a shilling to an old woman who fwept the hall: This difburfement funk my finances to thirteen pence halfpenny, with which I was fneaking off, when Jackfon perceiving it, came up to me, and begged I would tarry for him and he would accompany me to the other end of the town, as foon as his examination should be over. I could not refuse this to a person that was so much my friend; but I was aftonished at the change of his dress, which was varied in half an hour from what I have already described, to a very grotesque fashion-His head was covered with an old smoaked tye-wig that did not boaft one crooked hair, and a flouched hat over it, which would have very well become a chimneysweeper or a dust-man; his neck was adorned with a black crape, the ends of which he had twifted, and fixed in the button-hole of a lhabby great coat that wrapped up his whole body; his white filk flockings were converted into black worsted hole; and his countenance was rendered venerable by wrinkles, and a beard of his own painting. - When I ex-

,

n

t,

ie

f-

in color

I expressed my surprize at this metamorphosis, he laughed, and told me, it was done by the advice and affiftance of a friend who lived over the way, and would certainly produce fomething very much to his advantage; for it gave him the appearance of age, which never fails of attracting respect. I applauded his fagacity, and waited with impatience. for the effects of it. At length he was called in, but whether the oddness of his appearance excited a curiofity more than usual in the board, or his behaviour was not suitable to his figure, I know not, he was discovered to be an impostor, and put into the hands of the beadle, in order to be fent to Bridewell. So that if flead of feeing him come out with a chearful countenance, and a surgeon's qua-I fication in his hand, I perceived him led through the outward hall as a prisoner; and was very much alarmed and anxious to know the occasion; when he called with a lamentable voice and piteous aspect, to me, and some others who knew him; "For "God's fake, gentlemen, bear witness that I am the same individual John Jackson, who served as furgeon's fecond mate on board the Elizabeth, or " else I shall go to Bridewell."-It would have been impossible for the most austere hermit that ever lived, to have refrained from laughing at his appearance and address; we therefore indulged ourselves a good while at his expence, and afterwards pleaded his cause so effectually with the beadle, who was gratified with half a crown, that the prisoner was dismissed; and in a few moments refumed his former gaity; -fwearing, fince the board had refus'd his money, he would spend it every shilling before he went to bed in treating his friends; at the same time inviting us all to favour him with our company. It was now ten o'clock at night, and as I had a great way to walk thro' streets that were utterly unknown to me, I was prevailed upon to be of their party, in hopes

he would afterwards accompany me to my lodgings, according to his promise. He carried us to his friend's house, who kept a tavern over the way, where we remained drinking punch, until the liquor mounted up to our heads, and made us all extremely frolicksome: I, in particular was so much elevated, that nothing would ferve me but a wench, at which Jackson expressed much joy, and assured me I should have my defire before we parted. - Accordingly, when he had paid the reckoning we fallied out, roaring and finging; and were conducted by our leader to a place of nocturnal entertainment, where I immediately attached myself to a fair one, with whom I proposed to found the remaining part of the night; but the not relishing my appearance, refused to grant my request before I had made her an acknowledgement, which not fuiting with my circumstances, we broke off our correspondence, to my no small mortification and refentment, because I thought the mercenary creature had not done justice to my merit. - In the mean time, Mr. Jackon's dress had attracted the inclinations and affiduities of two or three nymphs, who loaded him with careffes, in return for the arrack punch with which he treated them; till at length, notwithstanding the sprightly fallies of those charmers, sleep began to exert his power over us all: and our conductor called, "To pay." When the bill was brought, which amounted to twelve shillings, he put his hand in his pocket, but might have faved himfelf the trouble, for his purfe was gone. - This accident disconcerted him a good deal at first, but after some recollection he feized the two Dulcineas, who fat by him. one in each hand; and fwore if they did not immediately restore his money, he would charge a constable with them.—The good lady at the bar feeing what passed, whispered something to the drawer, who went out; and then with great composure, asked what was the matter? - Jackson told her he was robbed, 10 . !:

;

1,

d

18

W

to

e,

es

he

and fwore if the refused him fatisfaction, he would have her and her whores committed to Bridewell .- " Rob-" bed (cried she) robbed, in my house ! gentlemen and " ladies, I take you all to witness, this person has " fcandalized my reputation."-At that inflant, feeing the constable and watch enter, she went on, 46 What! you must not only endeavour by your " false aspersions to ruin my character; but even " commit an affault upon my family? Mr. Confta-" ble, I charge you with this uncivil person, who " has been guilty of a riot here, I shall take care and " bring an action against him for defamation."-While I was reflecting on this melancholy event, which had made me quite fober, the lady whose fayours I had follicited, being piqued at fome repartee that passed between us, cried, "They are all concerned;" and defired the constable to take us all into custody, which was performed instantly, to the utter aftonishment and despair of us all, except Jackson, who having been often in fuch fcrapes was very little concerned, and charged the constable, in his turn, with the landlady and her whole bevy: Upon which we were carried all together prisoners to the Roundhouse; where Jackson (after a word of comfort to us) informed the conftable of his being robbed, to which he faid he would fwear next morning before the justice.—" Ay, ay, (fays the bawd) we shall see "whose oath will most fignify."-In a little time the constable calling Jackson into another room, spoke to him thus; "I perceive that you and your company are strangers, and am very forry for your " being involved in fuch an ugly bufiness as this is. 4 I have known this woman a great while; she has kept a notorious house in this neighbourhood these many years; and although often complained of as a nuisance, still escapes thro' her interest with he 1 -t-ces, to whom the and all of her employ-" ment, pay contribution quarterly for protection .--46 As

escorted

As she charged me with you first, her complaint will have the preference, and she can procure evidence to fwear whatever she shall please to defire of 66 them. So that, unless you make it up before "morning, you and your companions may think 66 yourselves happily quit for a month's hard labour " in Bridewell.-Nay, if the should swear a robbe-" ry or affault against you, you will be committed " to Newgate, and tried next fessions at the Old-"Baily for your life." This last piece of information had fuch an effect upon Jackson, that he agreed to make it up, provided his money might be restored: The constable told him, that instead of retrieving what he had loft, he was pretty certain, it would cost him some more before they would come to any composition.—But however, he had compassion on him, and would, if he pleased, sound them about a mutual release. - The unfortunate beau thanked him for his friendship, and returning to us, acquainted us with the substance of this dialogue: while the constable desiring to speak in private with our adversary, carried her into the next room, and pleaded our cause so effectually, that she condescended to make him umpire: He accordingly proposed an arbitration, to which we gave our affent; and he fined each party in three shillings to be laid out in a bowl of punch, wherein we drowned all animofities to the inexpressible joy of my two late acquaintances and me, who had been in the state of the damned ever fince Jackson mentioned Bridewell and Newgate. - By the time we had finished our bowl, to which, by the by, I had contributed my last shilling, it was morning; and I proposed to move homeward, when the constable gave me to understand, he could discharge no prisoners but by order of the justice, before whom we must appear. - This renewed my chagrin, and I curfed the hour in which I had yielded to Jackson's invitation.—About nine o' clock we were G 2

1,

0 0

re

ee

ne

n,

ur ur

is.

as

efe

as

he

y-

As

escorted to the house of a certain justice not many miles distant from Covent-Garden; who no sooner faw the constable enter with a train of prisoners at his heels, than he faluted him as follows: "So, Mr. " Conflable, you are a diligent man-what den of " rogues have you been fcouring?" Then looking at us, who appeared very much dejected, he continued, "Ay, ay, thieves, I fee-old offenders-O " your humble fervant, Mrs. Harridan! I suppose " these fellows have been taken robbing your houseer yes, yes, here's an old acquaintance of minevou have used expedition (said he to me) in re-" turn from transportation; but we shall save you " that trouble for the future—the furgeons will fetch " you from your next transportation at their ex-" pence." I affured his worship he was mistaken in me, for he had never feen me in his life before.-To this he replied, "How! you impudent rafcal, dare you fay fo to my face? Do you think I am so to be imposed upon by that northern accent which you have affumed? but it shan't avail you, -you " fhall find me too far north for you, - Here, clerk, " write this fellow's mittimus - His name is Patrick "Gaghagan."-Here Mr. Jackson interposed, and told him, I was a Scotchman lately come to town, descended of a good family, and that my name was Random. - The justice looked upon this declaration as an outrage upon his memory, on which he valued himself much; and strutting up to Jackson, with a fierce countenance, put his hands in his fides, and faid, "Who are you, Sir, -Do you give me the " lie?-Take notice, gentlemen, here's a fellow " who affronts me upon the bench, but I'll lay you " fast, sirrah, I will, - for notwithstanding your "-- laced acket, I believe you are a notorious felon."--My friend was fo much abashed at this menace, which was thundered out with great vociferation, that he changed colour, and remained speechless -This

This his worship took for a symptom of guilt, and to compleat the discovery, continued his threats----"Now, I am convinced you are a thief, - your face "discovers it, -- you tremble all over -- your consci-" ence won't lie still-you'll be hang'd, firrah (rai-" fing his voice) you'll be hanged, and happy had it been for the world, as well as your own miserable " foul, if you had been detected and cut off in the " beginning of your career. - Come hither, clerk, " and take this man's confession."-I was in an agony of consternation, when the constable going into another room with his worship, acquainted him with the truth of the story: upon which he returned with a fmiling countenance, and addressing himself to us all, said, it was always his way to terrify young people, when they came before him, that his threats might make a strong impression on their minds, and deterr them from engaging in feenes of riot and debauchery which commonly ended before the judge - Thus having cloaked his own want of difcernment, under the difguise of paternal care, we were dismissed, and I found myfelf as much lightened as if a mountain had been lifted off my breaft. eld a sociocopia it in 图 (01) 2 200

and near I bas a drawn lamb a delivery had commission

u

ır

n,

freety des the secretary permise to the format policing the end in climatic found from the wilder the daying d maned a leolger inciniele, contends, and awardiw rash of estable with aid to the rest without describe a management should be a second communities and nectioned elegater on our expedicions, when I unor hadron more thank by 'mortific form our homests read to topo him established to to tollare and to a suit of the first blood and the state of the state of

CHAP. XVIII.

I carry my qualification to the navy-office—
the nature of it—the behaviour of the f—
t—y—Strap's concern for my absence—
a battle betwixt him and a blacksmith—the
troublesome consequences of it—his barrangue
to me—his friend the school master recommends me to a French apothecary, who entertains me as a journeyman.

Would willingly have gone home to fleep, but was told by my companions, that we must deliver our letters of qualification at the navy-office before one a-clock; upon which we repaired thither, and gave them to the f-t-y, who opened and read them, and I was mightily pleased to find myself qualified for fecond mate of a third rate. When he had fluck them altogether on a file, one of our company asked if there were any vacancies; to which he anfwered, No. Then I ventured to enquire if any ships were to be put in commission soon.-At which he furveyed me with a look of ineffable contempt, and pushing us out of his office, locked the door without deigning us another word .- We went down stairs and conferred together on our expectations, when I understood that each of them had been recommended to one or other of the commissioners; and each of them promised the first vacancy that should fall; but that none of them relied folely upon that interest, without a present to the f-t-y, with whom some of the c-mm-rs went fnacks. - For which reason each of them had provided a finall purse; and I was asked what

what I proposed to give? - This was a vexatious question to me, who (far from being in a capacity to gratify a ravenous f-t-y) had not wherewithal to purchase a dinner. - I therefore answered, I had not yet determined what to give; and fneaked off towards my own lodging, curfing my fate all the way, and inveighing with much bitterness against the barbarity of my grandfather, and the fordid avarice of my relations, who left me a prey to contempt and indigence.—Full of these disagreeable reflections, I arrived at the house where I lodged, and relieved my landlord from great anxiety on my account; for this honest man believed I had met with some dismal accident, and that he should never see me again -Strap, who had been to visit me in the morning, understanding I had been abroad all night, was almost distracted, and after having obtained leave of his malter, had gone in quest of me, though he was even more ignorant of the town than I. Not being willing to inform my landlord of my adventure, I told him, I had met an acquaintance at Surgeon's-hall, with whom I fpent the evening and night, but being very much infested by bugs, I had not slept much, and therefore intended to take a little repose; so saying, I went to bed and defired to be awakened if Strap should happen to come while I should be asleep. - I was accordingly roufed by my friend himfelf, who entered my chamber about three a clock in the afternoon; and presented a figure to my eyes, that I could scarce believe real. - In short this affectionate shaver, fetting out towards Surgeon's-hall, had enquired for me there to no purpose; from thence he found his way to the Navy-office, where he could hear no tidings of me, because I was unknown to every body then present; he afterwards went upon Change in hopes of feeing me upon the Scotch walk; but without fuccess: At last, being almost in despair of finding me, he resolved to alk every body he met in the street, if per-G 4 chance

h

d

chance any one could give him information about me: and actually put his refolution in practice, in spite of the scoffs, curses, and reproaches with which he was answered; until a blacksmith's 'prentice, seeing him stop a porter with a burden on his back, and hearing his question, for which he received a hearty curse, called to him, and asked if the person he enquired after was not a Scotchman? - Strap replied with great eagerness, "Yes, and had on a brown coat with " long skirts." - " The fame (faid the blacksmith) I " faw him pass by an hour ago." —" Did you so? " (cried Strap, rubbing his hands) Odd! I am very "glad of that - which way went he?" - "Towards "Tyburn in a cart (faid he) if you make good " fpeed you may get thither time enough to fee him " hang'd." - This piece of wit incenfed my friend to fuch a degree, that he called the blacksmith scoundrel, and protested he would fight him for half a farthing-"No, no, (faid the other, stripping) " I'll have " none of your money—you Scotchmen feldom carry any about you—but I'll fight you for love" -There was a ring immediately formed by the mob: and Strap finding he could not get off honourably without fighting, at the fame time burning with refentment against his adversary, quitted his cloaths to the care of the multitude, and the battle began with great violence on the fide of Strap, who in a few minutes exhausted his breath and spirits on his patient antagonift, who fuftained the affault with great coolness, till finding the barber quite spent, he returned the blows he had lent him, with fuch interest, that Strap, after having received three falls on the hard stones, gave out, and allowed the blacksmith to be the better man. - The victory being thus decided, it was proposed to adjourn to a cellar hard by and drink friends. -But when my friend began to gather up his cloaths, he perceived that fome honest person or other had made free with his fhirt, neckcloth, hat and wig, which

which were carried off; and probably his coat and waiftcoat would have met with the same fate, had they been worth stealing. - It was in vain for him to make a noise, which only yielded mirth to the spectators; he was fain to get off in this manner, which he accomplished with much difficulty, and appeared before me, all befmeared with blood and dirt.-Notwithstanding this misfortune, such was his tranfport at finding me fafe and found, that he had almost flifled and flunk me to death with his embraces .-After he had cleaned himself and put on one of my fhirts, and a woolen night-cap; I recounted to him the particulars of my night's campaign, which filled him with admiration, and made him repeat with great energy an observation which was often in his mouth, namely " that furely London is the devil's drawing-room."-As neither of us had dined, he defired me to get up, and the milk-woman coming round at that instant, he went down stairs and brought up a quart, with a penny brick, on which we made a comfortable meal. He then shared his money with me, which amounted to eighteen-pence, and left me, with an intention to borrow an old wig and hat of his friend the school master.

He was no fooner gone than I began to consider my fituation with great uneafines, and revolved all the schemes my imagination could suggest, in order to choose and pursue some one that would procure me bread; for it is impossible to express the pangs I selt, when I reslected on the miserable dependance in which I lived, at the expence of a poor barber's boy.— My pride took the alarm, and having no hopes of succeeding at the Navy-office, I came to a resolution of enlisting in the foot-guards next day, coute que coute.—This extravagant design, by stattering my disposition, gave great satisfaction, and I was charging the enemy at the head of my own regiment, when Strap's return interrupted my reverie.—The school-master

master had made him a present of the tye-wig which he wore when I was introduced to him, together with an old hat, whose brims would have overshadowed a Coloffus. - Though Strap had ventured to wear them in the dusk, he did not choose to entertain the mob by day; therefore went to work immediately and reduced them both to a moderate fize. While he was employed in this office, he addressed me thus: "To be fure, Mr. Random, you are born a gentle-" man, and have a great deal of learning-and in-" deed look like a gentleman, for as to person you " may hold up your head with the best of them.-"On the other hand, I am a poor, but honest cobler's fon-my mother was as industrious a woman " as ever broke bread, 'till fuch time as fhe took to " drinking, which you very well know-but every " body has failings-humanum est errare.- Now for " myself I am a poor journeyman barber, tolerably " well made and understand some Latin, and have " a fmattering of Greek-but what of that? perhaps " I might also say that I know a little of the world " - but that is to no purpose - though you be gentle " and I simple, it does not follow but that I who am simple may do a good office to you who are " gentle - Now this is the case-my kinsman the of school-master-perhaps you did not know how. " nearly he is related to me -I'll fatisfy you in that " prefently-his mother and my grandmother's fifter's " nephew-no, that's not it-my grandfather's bro-" ther's daughter-rabbit it! I have forgot the degree. w but this I know, he and I are cousins seven times " removed."-- My impatience to know the good office he had done me, got the better of my temper, and interrupted him at this place, with, "D - n your " relation and pedigree, - if the school-master or wou can be of any advantage to me, why don't you " tell me without all this preamble." - When I pronounced these words with some vehemence, Strap looked

looked at me for fome time with a grave countenance, and then went on: " Surely, our pedigree is not to " be d-n'd, because it is not so noble as yours. - I " am very forry to fee fuch an alteration in your tem-" per of late—you was always fiery, but now you " are grown as crabbed as old Periwinkle the drunk-" en tinker, on whom you and I (God forgive us) " played fo many unlucky tricks, while we were at " fchool; -but I will no longer detain you in fufof pence, because (doubtless) nothing is more uneasy than doubt-dubio procul dubio nil dubius. - My " friend, or relation, or which you will, or both, the school-master, being informed of the regard I " have for you - for you may be fure, I did not fail to " let him know your good qualities--by the by, he " has undertaken to teach you the pronounciation of the English-tongue, without which (he fays) you " will be unfit for business in this country.—I say, my relation has spoke in your behalf to a French 44 apothecary who wants a journeyman; and on his " recommendation, you may have fifteen pounds per " year, bed and board, whenever you pleafe."-I was too much interested in this piece of news to entertain it with indifference; but jumping up, infifted on Strap's immediately accompanying me to the house of his friend, that I might not loofe this opportunity through the least delay or neglect on my part.-We were informed that the school-master was in company at a publick house in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired, and found him drinking with the very individual apothecary in question. When he was called to the door at our defire, and observed my impatience, he broke out in his usual term of admiration. " O' " Ch-ft! I suppose when you heard of this offer, " you did not take leifure enough to come down. " stairs, but leapt out of the window; did you over-" turn no porter nor oyster-woman in your way? " -It was a mercy of God you did not knock your

brains out against some post in your career. - O'my conscience! I believe had I been in the inmost recesses of my habitation,—the very penetralia, even in bed with my wife; your eagerness would have furmounted bolts, bars, decency and every "thing.—The den of Cacus, or Sanctum Sanctorum could not have hid me from you. But come along, the gentleman of whom I spoke is in the house, I, " will present you to him forthwith."-When I entered the room, I perceived four or five people. smoaking, one of whom the school-master accosted thus: " Mr. Lavement, here's the young man of "whom I spoke to you."-The apothecary, who was a little old withered man, with a forehead about an inch high, a nose turned up at the end, large cheek bones that helped to form a pit for his little grey eyes, a great bag of loofe skin hanging down on each fide in wrinkles like the alforias of a baboon; and a mouth so accustomed to that contraction which produces grinning, that he could not pronounce a fyllable without discovering the remains of his teeth, which confifted of four yellow fangs, not improperly by anatomists, called canine.—This person, (I say) after having eyed me fome time; faid, " Oho, 'tis ver well, Monf. Concordance; - young man, you are ver welcome, take one coup of bierre-and come to mine house to-marrow morning, Mons. "Concordance vil shew you de way."-Upon this I made my bow, and as I went out of the room, could hear him fay, Ma foy ! ce'ft un beau garcon, ce'ft un galliard.—As I had by my own application while I ferved Crab, acquired the French tongue well enough to read authors written in that language, and understand any thing that occurred in conversation, I determined to pretend ignorance to my new mafter, that he and his family, whom I supposed to be of the fame country, not being on the referve before me, might possibly discover something in discourse, which would

would either yield me amusement or advantage.-Next morning Mr. Concordance carried me to the apothecary's house, where the bargain was made. and orders given to provide an apartment for me immediately. - But before I entered upon business, the school-master recommended me to his taylor, who gave me credit for a fuit of cloaths to be paid out of the first moiety of my wages, and they were begun upon that very day; he afterwards accommodated me with a new hat, on the same terms; so that in a few days. I hoped to make a very fashionable appearance.—In the mean time, Strap conveyed my baggage to the place allotted for me, which was a back room up two pair of stairs, furnished with a pallet for me to-lie upon, a chair without a back, an earthen chamberpot without a handle, a bottle by way of candleflick, and a triangular piece of glass instead of a mirrour. the rest of its ornaments having been lately removed to one of the garrets, for the convenience of the fervant of an Irish captain, who lodged in the first floor.

CHAP. XIX.

The characters of Mr. Lavement, his wife and daughter—some anecdotes of the family—the mother and daughter rivals—I am guilty of a mistake that gives me present satisfaction, but is attended with troublesome consequences.

NEXT day, while I was at work in the fhop, a bouncing damfel well-dressed came in, on pretence of finding a vial for some use or other; and taking an opportunity when she thought I did not mind her, of observing me narrowly, went away with a silent look of disdain.—I easily guessed her fenti-

fentiments, and my pride took the resolution of entertaining the fame indifference and neglect towards her. - At dinner, the maids with whom I dined in the kitchin, gave me to understand that this was my mafter's only daughter, who would have a very handfome fortune, on account of which, and her beauty, a great many young gentlemen made their addresses to her—that she had been twice on the brink of marriage, but disappointed by the stinginess of her father, who refused to part with a shilling to promote the match-for which reason the young lady did not behave to her father with all the filial veneration that might be expected: In particular, she harboured the most perfect hatred for his countrymen, in which disposition she resembled her mother, who was an English woman; and by the hints they dropp'd, I learned the grey mare was the better horse—that she was a matron of a high spirit, which was often manifested at the expence of her dependants: that she loved diversions; and looked upon miss as her rival in all parties; which was indeed the true cause of her difappointments; for had the mother been hearty in her interest, the father would not have ventured to refuse her demands .- Over and above this intelligence, I of myself, soon made more discoveries; Mr. Lavement's fignificant grins at his wife, while she looked another way, convinc'd me that he was not at all content with his lot: And his behaviour in presence of the captain, made me believe his chief torment was jealoufy. - As for my own part, I was confider'd in no other light than that of a menial fervant, and had been already fix days in the house without being honour'd with one word from either mother or daughter, the latter (as I understood from the maids) having at table one day, expressed some surprize that her papa should entertain such an aukward, meanlooking journeyman.-I was nettled at this piece of information, and next Sunday, (it being my turn to

take my diversion) dressed myself in my new cloaths to the greatest advantage, and, vanity apart, made no contemptible figure.—After having spent most part of the day in company with Strap and some of his acquaintance, I came home in the afternoon, and was let in by mis, who not knowing me, dropt a low courtely as I advanced, which I returned with a profound bow, and thut the door .- By that time I had turn'd about, she had perceiv'd her mistake, and changed colour, but did not withdraw. The passage being narrow, I could not get away without jostling her; fo, I was forc'd to remain where I was, with my eyes fix'd on the ground, and my face glowing with blushes-At length her vanity coming to her affiftance, the went away tittering, and I could hear her pronounce the word " creature:" From this day forward, she came into the shop fifty times every day, upon various pretences, and put in practice fo many ridiculous airs, that I could eafily perceive her opinion of me was chang'd, and that she did not think me altogether an unworthy conquest-But my heart was fo steel'd against her charms by pride and refentment, which were two chief ingredients in my disposition, that I remain'd insensible to all her arts: and notwithstanding some advances she made, could not be prevail'd upon to yield her the least attention-This neglect foon banish'd all the favourable impressions the felt for me, and the rage of a flighted woman took place in her heart; this she manifested not only in all the fuggestions her malice could invent to my prejudice with her father, but also in procuring for me fuch fervile employments, as she hoped, would fufficiently humble my spirit. One day in particular, she order'd me to brush my master's coat, but I refusing, a smart dialogue ensued, which ended in her burfting into tears of rage; when her mother interpoling, and examining into the merits of the cause, determin'd it in my favour; and this good

office I ow'd not to any efteem or confideration she had for me, but folely to the defire of mortifying her daughter, who on this occasion observ'd, that let people be never fo much in the right, there were fome folks who would never do them justice; but to be fure, they had their reason for it, which some people were not ignorant of, although they despised their little arts. - This infinuation of some people and fome folks, put me upon observing the behaviour of my mistress more narrowly for the future; and it was not long before I had reason to believe that she look'd upon her daughter as a rival in the affections of captain Odonnell, who lodg'd in the house. - In the mean time my industry and knowledge gain'd me the good will of my master, who would often say in French, "Mardy! c'est un bon Gargon." He had a great deal of buliness; but as he was mostly employed among his fellow refugees, his profits were fmall.-However, his expence for medicines was not great, he being the most expert man at a succedaneum, of any apothecary in London, fo that I have been fometimes amaz'd to fee him, without the leaft helitation, make up a phylician's prescription, though he had not in his shop one medicine mentioned in it. - Ovster-shells he could convert into crab's eves; common oil into oil of fweet almonds; fyrup of fugar into balfamic fyrup; Thames water into aqua cinnamomi; turpentine into capivi; and a hundred more costly preparations were produc'd in an instant, from the cheapest and coarfest drugs of the materia medica: And when any common thing was order'd for a patient, he always took care to disguise it in colour or tafte, or both, in fuch a manner, as that it could not possibly be known. - For which purpose, cochineal and oil of cloves were of great fervice. mong many nostrums which he posses'd, there was one for the venereal disease, that brought him a good deal of money; and this he conceal'd fo artfully from me,

me, that I could never learn its composition: But during the eight months I stay'd in his service. he was to unfortunate in the use of it, that three parts in four of those who took it, were fain to confirm the cure by a falivation under the direction of another doctor.-This bad fueces, in all appearance, attach'd him the more to his specific; and before I left him, I may venture to fay, he would have fooner renounc'd the Trinity (notwithstanding his being a good Hugonot) than his confidence in the neverfailing power of this remedy.-Mr. Lavement had attempted more than once, to introduce a vegetable diet into his family, by launching out into the praise of roots and greens, and decrying the use of flesh, both as a physician and philosopher; but all his rhetoric could not make one profelyte to his opinion, and even the wife of his bosom declared against the proposal.—Whether it was owing to the little regard she paid to her husband's admonition in this particular, or to the natural warmth of her constitution, I know not; but this lady's passions became every day more and more violent, till at last she look'd upon decency as an unnecessary restraint; and one afternoon, when her hulband was abroad, and her daughter gone to vifit, order'd me to call a hackney coach, in which she and the captain drove towards Covent-Garden - Miss came home in the evening, and supping at her usual hour, went to bed .- About eleven a clock my master enter'd, and ask'd if his wife was gone to fleep: Upon which I told him, my mistress went out in the afternoon, and was not yet return'd .- This was like a clap of thunder to the poor Apothecary, who flarting back, cried " Mort de ma " vie! vat you tell a me !- My wife not at home!" -At that instant a patient's servant arriv'd with a prescription for a draught, which my master taking, went into the shop to make it up with his own hand. -While he rubb'd the ingredients in a glass mortar, he enquir'd of me, whether or no his wife went out alone; and no fooner heard that she was in company with the captain, than with one blow he fplit the mortar into a thousand pieces, and grinning like the head of a bass viol, exclaim'd, "Ah traitresse!"-It would have been impossible for me to have preserv'd my gravity a minute longer, when I was happily reliev'd by a rap at the door, which I open'd, and perceiv'd my mistress coming out of a coach; she floune'd immediately into the shop, and addressed her husband thus: " I suppose you thought I was loft, " my dear-Captain Odonnell has been fo good as " treat me with a play." - " Play-play (replied he) "Oho! yes by gar, I believe ver prettie play."-"Bless me! (said she) what's the matter?"-" Vat " de matter? (cried he, forgetting all his former " complaifance) by gar, you be one damn dog's wife -ventre bleu! me vill show you vat it is to put one horn upon mine head. Pardieu! le capitaine. "Odonnell be one."-Here the captain, who had been all the while at the door discharging the coach, enter'd, and faid with a terrible voice, " D-mme! " what am I ?"-Mr. Lavement changing his tone, immediately faluted him with, " Ob ferviteur monse sieur le capitaine, vous etes un gallant homme-ma " femme est fort obligée."-Then turning about towards me, pronounc'd with a low voice, " Et diable-"ment obligeante fans doute." - " Harkee, Mr. Lave-" ment, (faid the captain) I am a man of honour, " and I believe you are too much of a gentleman to " be offended at the civility I shew your wife." -This declaration had fuch an effect on the apothecary, that he refum'd all the politesse of a Frenchman; and with the utmost prostration of compliment, affur'd the captain that he was perfectly well fatisfied with the honour he had done his wife. -Matters being thus compos'd, every body went to reft.—Next day I perceiv'd through a glass door that open'd

u

open'd from the shop into the parlour, the captain talking earnestly to miss, who heard him with a look that expressed anger mingled with scorn; which however he at last found means to mollify, and feal'd his reconciliation with a kifs. -- This foon convinc'd me of the occasion of the guarrel; but notwithstanding all my vigilance, I could never difcover any other commerce between them. -- In the mean while, I had reason to believe I had inspir'd one of the maids with tender fentiments for me; and one night when I thought every other person in the house asleep, I took the opportunity of going to reap the fruits of my conquest; her bedfellow having the day before gone to Richmond to vifit her parents - Accordingly I got up, and (naked as I was) explor'd my way in the dark, to the garret where the lay .- I was ravished to find the door open, and moved foftly to her bed-fide, transported with the hope of compleating my wishes.—But what horrors of jealoufy and disappointment did I feel, when I found her alleep, fast locked in the arms of a man, whom I eafily gueffed to be no other than the captain's fervant! I was upon the point of doing some rash thing, when the noise of a rat scratching behind the wainfcot, put me to flight, and I was fain to get back to my own bed in fafety. - Whether this alarm had disorder'd my mind, or that I was led aftray by the power of destiny, I know not; but instead of turning to the left hand, when I descended to the second ftory, I pursu'd the contrary course, and mistook the young lady's bed-chamber for my own. I did not perceive my mistake before I had run against the bed posts; and then it was not in my power to retreat undiscover'd; for the nymph being awake, felt my approach, and with a foft voice, bad me make less noise lest the Scotch-booby in the next room should over-hear us. This hint was sufficient to inform me of the nature of the affignation; and as my paffions, at any time high, were then in a state of exaltation, I was resolved refolved to profit by my good fortune. - Without any more ceremony therefore, I made bold to flip into bed to this charmer, who gave me as favourable a reception as I could defire. Our conversation was very fparing on my part, but the upbraided the perfon whom I represented, with his jealousy of me, whom the handled to roughly, that my refentment had well nigh occasioned a discovery more than once; but I was confoled for her hatred of me, by the revenge I enjoyed in understanding from her own mouth, that it was now high time to falve her reputation by matrimony; for the had reason to fear the could not much longer conceal the effects of their mutual intercourfe. - While I was meditating an answer to this propofal, I heard a noise in my room, like fomething heavy falling down upon the floor: Upon which I started up, and creeping to the door of my chamber, observ'd by moon-light, the shadow of a man groping his way out; whereupon, I retir'd to one fide to let him pass, and faw him go down stairs as expeditiously as he could.—It was an easy matter to divine that this was the captain, who having overflept himself, had got up at last to keep his assignation; and finding my door open, had enter'd into my apartment instead of that of his mistress, where I supplied his place. - But finding his miftake, by falling over my chair, was afraid the noise might alarm the family, and for that reason made off, delaying the gratification of his defire till another opportunity. - By this time, I was fatisfied; and instead of returning to the place from whence I came, retreated to my own caltle, which I fortified by bolting the door, and in the congratulation of my own happiness fell asleep.— But the truth of this adventure could not be long conceal'd from my young miftress, who next day came to an eclair diffement with the captain, upon his lamenting his last night's disappointment, and begging pardon for the noise he had made.—Their mutual

mutual chagrin, when they came to the knowledge of what had happen'd, may be eafily conjectur'd, though each had a peculiar grief unfelt by the other; for the was conscious of not only having betray'd to me the fecrets of her commerce with him; but also, of having incenfed me by the freedoms fhe had taken with my name, beyond a hope of reconciliation.-On the other hand, his jealoufy fuggested, that her forrow was all artifice; and that I had supplied his place with her own privity and confent.—That fuch was the fituation of their thoughts, will appear in the fequel-for that very day she came into the shop where I was alone, and fixing her eyes, fwimming in tears, upon me, figh'd most piteously: But I was proof against her diffress, by recollecting the epithets with which she had honour'd me the night before; and believing that the good reception I enjoy'd was deftin'd for another; therefore took no notice of her afflicion; and the had the mortification to find her diffain return'd four-fold .-- However, from thenceforward the thought proper to use me with more complaisance than usual, knowing that it was in my power at any time to publish her shame. - By these means my life became much more agreeable (though I never could prevail upon myfelf to repeat my nocturnal visit) and as I every day improv'd in my knowledge of the town, I shook off my aukward air by degrees, and acquir'd the character of a polite journeyman apothecary in going ward to call my scott, the tword inere epon my breaff-bone,

and the points remained flicking in the flan - When

I reflected upon this cverte, I bound not perinade my-

short more many a vid-bell with more bad I man Men

which is placed that had been at it demond; her

diament i out me (out our croile) tite it think

All and weather the I will and the state of the bear

y

O

n

in

-

ig

ay

nd

eir

ial

. .

BECHELSE BECKERSE BECKERSE

CHAP. XX.

I am assaulted and dangerously wounded—suspect Odonnell, and am confirmed in my opinion—concert a scheme of revenge, and put it in execution—Odonnell robs his own servant, and disappears—I make my addresses to a lady, and am miraculously deliver'd from her snare.

NE night about twelve o' clock, as I return'd from visiting a patient at Chelsea, I received a blow on my head from an unfeen hand, that ftretch'd me senseless on the ground; and was left as dead with three stabs of a fword in my body. The groans I utter'd when I recover'd the use of my reason, alarm'd the people of a solitary ale-house, that stood near the spot where I lay, and they were humane enough to take me in, and fend for a furgeon, who dreffed my wounds, and affur'd me they were not mortal. One of them penetrated through the skin and muscles of one side of my belly in such a manner, that (doubtless) the affaffin imagin'd he had run me through the entrails.-The fecond flanted along one of my ribs, and the last, which was intended for the Coup de Grace, being directed to my heart, the fword fnapt upon my breaft-bone, and the point remained flicking in the skin. - When I reflected upon this event, I could not persuade myfelf, that I had been affaulted by a common footpad; because it is not usual for such people to murder those they rob, especially when they meet with no relistance; and I found my money and every thing else about me (but my carcase) safe. I concluded therefore, that I must either have been mistaken for another, or obliged to the private refentment of some secret enemy for what had happened; and as I could remember no-body who had the leaft cause of complaint against me, except captain Odonnell and my mafter's daughter, my suspicion settled upon them, though I took care to conceal it, that I might the fooner arrive at confirmation.—With this view, I went home in a chair about ten o' clock in the morning; and as the chairmen supported me into the house, met the captain in the passage; who no fooner faw me, than he ftarted back, and gave evident figns of guilty confusion, which he would have accounted for from the furprize occasion'd by feeing me in fuch a condition.-My mafter having heard my flory, condoled me with a good deal of fympathy, and when he understood my wounds were not dangerous, order'd me to be carried up flairs to bed; though not without some opposition from his wife, who was of opinion, it would be better for me to go to an holpital, where I should be more carefully attended. - My meditation was employed in concerting with myfelf fome method of revenge against squire Odonnell and his enamorata, whom I looked upon as the authors of my misfortune; when miss (who was not at home at my arrival) entered my chamber; and faying she was forry for the accident that had befallen me, asked if I suspected any body to be the assassin: Upon which I fixed my eyes fledfastly upon her, and answer'd, "Yes."-She discover'd no symptom of confusion; but replied haftily, " If that be the cafe, why don't " you take out a warrant to have him apprehended? It-will cost but a trifle-if you have no money, 1'll " lend you." - This frankness not only cur'd me of my suspicion with respect to her; but even stagger'd my belief with regard to the captain, of whose guilt I resolv'd to have further proof, before I enterpriz'd any thing in the way of revenge. - I thanked

S

この ここと トリー

ed her kindly for her generous offer; which however I had no occasion to accept, being determin'd to do nothing rashly: For though I could plainly perceive the person who attacked me, to be a soldier whose face I thought was familiar to me, I could not fwear with a fafe conscience to any particular man; and granting I could, my profecution of him would not much avail. - This I pretended, left the captain hearing from her, that I knew the person who wounded me, might think proper to withdraw before I could be in a condition to requite him. In two days I was up, and able to do a little bufiness, to that Mr. Lavement made thift to carry on his practice, without hiring another journeyman in my room. - The first thing I attempted towards a certain discovery of my secret enemy, was to get into Odonnell's apartment, while he was abroad in an undress, and examine his sword, the point of which being broke off, I applied the fragment that was found flicking in my body, and found it answer'd the fractur'd part exactly. — There was no room left for doubt; and all that remained, was to fix upon a scheme of revenge, which almost solely engroffed my thoughts during the space of eight nights and days, ---- Sometimes I was tempted to fall upon him in the fame manner as he had practifed upon me, and kill him outright. - But this my honour oppos'd as a piece of barbarous cowardice, in which he was not to be imitated. -At other times, I entertained thoughts of demanding fatisfaction in an honourable way; but was diverted from this undertaking by confidering the uncertainty of the event, and the nature of the injury he had done me, which did not entitle him to fuch easy terms. - At last I determin'd to pursue a middle course; and actually put my design in execution after this manner. - Having fecured the affiffance of Strap and two of his acquaintance whom

1

, f

T

h

h

W

cl

ar

th

th

hi

th

Wa

he could depend upon, we provided ourselves with disguises, and I caused the following letter to be deliver'd to him by one of our affociates in livery, one funday evening.

SIR,

d

n

X

y

nt

d

ad

ut

us

d-

di-

ın-

n-

to

e a

ke-

om

he

If I may be allowed to judge from appearance, it will not be difagreeable to you to hear that my husband is gone to Bagshot to visit a patient, and will not return till to-morrow night; so that if you have any thing to propose to me (as your behaviour on many occasions has seemed to insinuate) you will do well to embrace the present

" opportunity of feeing

Yours, &c.

This letter was figned with the name of an apothecary's wife, who lived in Chelsea, of whom I had heard Odonnell was an admirer.- Every thing fucceeded to our wish. - The amorous hero hastened towards the place of affignation; and was encountered by us in the very place where he had affaulted me. -We rushed upon him all at once, secur'd his fword, ftript off his cloaths even to the fkin, which we scourged with nettles till he was bliftered from head to foot, notwithstanding all the eloquence of his tears and fupplications. When I was fatisfied with the stripes I had bestowed, we carried off his cloaths, which we hid in a hedge near the place, and left him flark naked, to find his way home in the best manner he could, while I took care to be there before him. - I afterwards understood that in his way to the lodgings of a friend, who lived in the skirts of the town, he was picked up by the watch, who carried him to the Round-house, from whence he fent for cloaths to his lodgings; and next Vol. I. morn-

morning arrived at the door in a chair, wrapt up in a blanket he had borrowed; for his body was fo fore and fwelled, that he could not bear to be confined in his wearing apparel. - He was treated with the utmost tenderness by my mistress and her daughter, who vied in their care and attendance of him; but Lavement himself could not forbear expreffing his joy, by feveral malicious grins, while he ordered me to prepare an unguent for his fores. -As to myself, no body can doubt my gratification, when I had every day an opportunity of feeing my revenge protracted on the body of my adverfary, by the ulcers of which I had been the cause; and indeed I not only enjoyed the fatisfaction of having flead him alive, but another also which I had not foreseen.-The story of his being attacked and ftript in fuch a place, having been inferted in the news, gave information to those who found his cloaths next day, whither to bring them; and accordingly he retrieved every thing he had loft, except a few letters, among which was that which I had wrote to him in the name of the apothecary's wife. - This and the others which (it feems) were all on the subject of love, (for this Hibernian hero was one of those people who are called fortune-hunters) fell into the hands of a certain female author, famous for the scandal she has published; who, after having embellished them with some ornaments of her own invention, gave them to the town in print.—I was very much shocked on reflecting, that I might possibly be the occasion of a whole family's unhappiness, on account of the letter I had written; but was eased of that apprehension, when I understood that the Chelsea apothecary had commenced a law-fuit against the printer for defamation; and looked upon the whole as a piece of forgery, committed by the author, who had difappeared. - But whatever might be his opinion of the matter, our two ladies feemed to entertain a different idea

idea of it; for, as foon as the pamphlet appeared, I could perceive their care of their patient confiderably diminish, until at last it ended in total neglect.-It was impossible for him to be ignorant of this change, any more than of the occasion of it; but as he was conscious to himself of having deserved worse than contempt at their hands, he was glad to come off fo cheaply, and contented himself with muttering curses and threats against the apothecary, who (as he imagined) having got an inkling of the appointment with his wife, had taken revenge of him in the manner described .- By that time he had got a new scarf skin, his character was become fo notorious, that he thought it high time for him to decamp; and this he performed in one night without beat of drum, after having robbed his own fervant of every thing that belonged to him except the cloaths he had on his back .--A few days after he disappeared, Mr. Lavement, for his own fecurity, took into custody a large old trunk which he had left; and as it was very heavy, made no question that the contents were sufficient to indemnify him for what Odonnel owed in lodging. - But a month being elapsed without hearing any tidings of this adventurer; and my master being impatient to know what the trunk contained; he ordered me to break it open in his presence, which I performed with the pestle of our great mortar, and discovered, to his inexpressible astonishment and mortification, a heap of stones.

About this time, my friend Strap informed me of an offer he had got to go abroad with a gentleman in quality of valet de chambre, and at the same time affured me, that whatever advantage he might propose to himself from this prospect, he could not bear the thoughts of parting from me; so much was he attached to my fortune.—In spite of all the obligations I owed to this poor honest fellow, ingratitude is so natural to the heart of man, that I began to be tired of his

e

-

d

h

0-

nt

p-

0-

er

ce

if-

he

ent

lea

acquaintance; and now, that I had contracted other friendships which appeared more creditable, was even ashamed to see a journeyman barber enquiring after me with the familiarity of a companion. - I therefore. on pretence of confulting his welfare, infifted upon his accepting the propofal, which he at last determined to embrace with great reluctance, and in a few days took his leave of me, shedding a flood of tears, which I could not behold without emotion. - I now began to look upon myself as a gentleman in reality; learned to dance of a Frenchman whom I had cured of a fashionable distemper; frequented plays during the holidays; became the oracle of an ale-house, where every dispute was referred to my decision; and at length contracted an acquaintance with a young lady, who found means to make a conquest of my heart, and upon whom I prevailed, after much attendance and folicitation to give me a promife of marriage. As this beautiful creature passed for a rich heiress, I bleffed my good fortune, and was actually on the point of crowning all my wifhes, by matrimony; when one morning, I went to her lodgings, and her maid being abroad, took the privilege of a bridegroom to enter her chamber, where to my utter confusion I found her in bed with a man.-Heaven gave me patience and presence of mind enough to withdraw immediately; and I thanked my stars a thousand times for the happy discovery, by which I resolved to profit so much, as to abandon all thoughts of marriage for the

at to best on or any of the frequency best of her

The Point of The P

#\`#\`#\`#**`#\#**#\#\#\#\\#\`#\`#\\#\\#\

CHAP. XXI.

Squire Gawky comes to lodge with my master—is involved in a troublesome affair, out of which he is extricated by me—he marries my master's daughter—they conspire against me—I am found guilty of thest—discharged—deserted by my friends—I bire a room in St. Giles's—where by accident, I find the lady to whom I made my addresses, in a miserable condition—I relieve her.

THILE I enjoyed myself at large in this temper of mind, Mr. Lavement let his first floor to my countryman and acquaintance Squire Gawky, who by this time had got a lieutenancy in the army, and such a martial ferocity in his appearance, that I was afraid he would remember what had happened between us in Scotland, and attone for his breach of appointment then, by his punctuality now; but whether he had actually forgot me, or was willing to make me believe so, he betrayed not the least fymptom of recognition at fight of me, and I remained quite cured of my apprehention; tho' I had occasion not long after to be convinced, that howfoever his externals might be altered, he was at bottom the fame individual Gawky whom I have already defcribed. -For coming home late one night from the house of a patient, I heard a noise in the street, and as I approached, perceived two gentlemen in custody of three watchmen. The prisoners, who were miferably distigured with dirt, complained bitterly of H 3 odve

the loss of their hats and wigs; and one of them, whom by his tongue I knew to be a Scotchman, lamented most piteously, offering a guinea for his liberty, which the watchman refused, alledging that one of his companions was wounded grievously, and that he must stand to the consequence. - My prejudice in favour of my native country was fo ftrong, that I could not bear to fee any body belonging to it in distress, and therefore, with one blow of my faithful cudgel, knocked down the watchman who had hold of the person for whom I was chiefly concerned.-He no fooner found himself disengaged, than he betook himself to his heels, and left me to maintain the difpute as I should think proper; and indeed I came off but scurvily, for before I could avail myself of my fpeed, I received a blow on the eye, from one of the other two, that had well nigh deprived me of the use of that organ; however, I made shift to get home, where I was informed of Captain Gawky's being robb'd and abused by a company of foot-pads; and was ordered by my mafter to prepare an emollient glyster and paregorick draught, in order to allay and compose the ferment of his spirits, occasioned by the barbarous treatment he had undergone, while he took twelve ounces of blood from him immediately. -When I enquired into the particulars of this adventure, and understood by the servant, that he came in just before me, without hat and wig, I made no scruple of believing him to be the person I had released, and was confirmed in that belief upon hearing his voice, to which (before that event) I had been so long a stranger. My eye being so considerably fwelled and inflamed, I could not reflect upon my enterprise without cursing my own folly, and even resolving to declare the truth of the whole story, in order to be revenged on the cowardly wretch, for whom I had fuffered: Accordingly, next day, after he had told, in presence of my master, his wife and daughter, who who came to visit him, a thousand lies concerning the prowess he had shewn in making his escape, I ventured to explain the mystery, and calling in the evidence of my contused eye, upbraided him with cowardice and ingratitude. - Gawky was fo aftonished at this discourse, that he could not answer one word; and the rest of the company stared at one another; till at length my mistress reprimanded me for my infolent behaviour, and threatened to turn me away for my prefumption.-Upon which, Gawky (having recollected himfelf) observed, as the young man might have mistaken another person for him, he could forgive his infinuations, more especially as he seemed to have suffered for his civility; but advised me to be more certain in my conjectures for the future, before I ventured to publish them to the prejudice of any man.-Miss applauded the captain's generosity in pardoning one who had fo villainously aspersed him, and I began to imagine her praise was not at all difinterested. But the apothecary, who perhaps had more penetration, or less partiality than his wife and daughter, differed from them in his fentiments of the matter, and expressed himself to me in the shop in this manner: "Ah mon pauvre Roderique! you ave more " of de veracité dan of de prudence-bot mine vife and dater be diablement fage, and Monf. le capi-" taine un fanfaron, pardieu !" This eulogium on his wife and daughter, though spoken ironically by him, was nevertheless literally just; by espousing the cause of Gawky, the one obliged a valuable lodger, and the other acquired a husband at a juncture, when one was absolutely necessary; for the young lady finding the effects of her correspondence with Odonnel becoming plainer and plainer every day, infinuated herself so artfully into the affection of this new lodger, than in less than a fortnight, on pretence of going to a play, they drove away together to the Fleet, where they were coupled; from thence removed to a bagnio, H 4

d

bagnio, where the marriage was confummated; and in the morning came home, where they asked her father's and mother's bleffing .- The prudent parents, notwithstanding the precipitation with which it was carried on, did not think fit to refuse their approbation; for the apothecary was not ill pleased to find his daughter married to a young man of a good profpect, who had not mentioned to him one fyllable on the article of her dowry; and his wife was rejoiced at being rid of a rival in her gallants, and a fpy upon her pleasures. - Nor was I without felf-enjoyment at this event, when I reflected upon the revenge I had unwittingly taken upon my enemy, in making him a cuckold by anticipation. - But I little dream'd what a storm of mischief was brewing against me, whilst I thus indulged myself .- Whatever face Gawky put on the matter, my discovery of the adventure before related, and the reproaches I vented against him, had stung him to the foul, and cherished the seeds of enmity fo strongly in his breast, that he (it seems) imparted his indignation to his wife, who being as defirous as he to compass the ruin of one that not only flighted her careffes, but was able on any occasion to discover particulars not at all advantageous to her character, readily joined in a conspiracy against me. which (had it taken effect as they expected) would infallibly have brought me to an ignominious death.

My master having several times missed large quantities of medicines of which I could give no account, at last lost all patience, and in plain terms taxed me with having embezzled them for my own use. As I could only oppose my single asseveration to his suspicion, he told me one day, "By gar, your vord not be give me de satisfaction—me find necessaire to chercher for my medicine, pardonnez moy—il faut chercher—me demand le cles of your coffre a cette heure."—Then raising his voice to conceal the fright be was in, lest I should make any oppositi-

on,

on, he went on, "Oui, foutre, I charge you ren"dez le clef of your coffre-moi-fi, moi qui vous orle."-I was fired with fo much refentment and disdain at this accusation, that I burst into tears, which he took for a fign of guilt; and pulling out my key, told him he might fatisfy himself immediately, though he would not find it fo eafy to fatisfy me for the injury my reputation had fuffered from his unjust fufpicion. He took the key and mounted up to my chamber, attended by the whole family; faving, What was my horror and amazement, when opening my cheft. I faw him pull out an handful of the very things that were miffing, and heard him pronounce. "Ah ha! vous etes bien venus-mardie, Monf. Roderique, you be fort innocent !"-I had not power to utter one word in my own vindication, but flood motionless and filent, while every body present made their respective remarks on what appeared against me. -The fervants faid, they were forry for my misfortune, and went away repeating, "Who would have " thought it!" My miftress took occasion from this to rail against the practice of employing strangers in general; and Mrs. Gawky, after having observed that the never had a good opinion of my fidelity. proposed to have me carried before the justice and committed to Newgate immediately. Her hufband was actually upon the stairs in his way for a constable, when Mr. Lavement, knowing the cost and trouble: of a profecution to which he must bind himself, and at the fame time dreading left fome particulars of my confession might affect his practice, called out, " Reftez mon fils! reftez, it be veritablement one " grand crime which dis pauvre diable have commit-" ted-bot peutetre de good God give him de peni-" tence, and me vil not have upon mine head de blood of one finner." - The captain and his lady ofed all the christian arguments their zeal could fug-H 5

gest, to prevail on the apothecary to pursue me to destruction, and represented the injustice he did to the community of which he was a member, in letting a villain escape, who would not fail of doing more mischief in the world, when he should reflect on his coming off fo eafily now: - but their eloquence made no impression on my master, who turning to me, faid, "Go, miserable, go from mine house, " quick, quick—and make reparation for your mau" vaile actions."—By this time my indignation had roused me from the stupefaction in which I had hitherto remained, and I began in this manner: "Sir, "appearances, I own, condemn me; but you are " imposed upon as much as I am abused-I have fallen a facrifice to the rancour of that scoundrel (point-" ing to Gawky) who has found means to convey your goods hither, that the detection of them might blaft my reputation, and accomplish my destruction.—His hatred of me is owing to a conscious-" ness of his having wronged me in my own country; for which he in a cowardly manner refused me the fatisfaction of a gentleman; -he knows " moreover, that I am no stranger to his dastardly " behaviour in this town, which I have recounted " before;—and he is unwilling that fuch a testimony of his ingratitude and pufilanimity should live upon " the earth; for this reason he is guilty of the most " infernal malice to bring about my ruin. - And I am afraid, madam, (turning to Mrs. Gawky) you have too eafily entered into the fentiments of your husband-I have often found you my enemy; and am well acquainted with the occasion of your " being fo, which I don't at present think proper to declare; but I would not advise you, for your own s fake, to drive me to extremity." This address enraged her fo much, that with a face as red as fearlet, and the eyes of a fury, the strutted up to me, and putting her hands in her sides, spit in my face, saying,

ing, I was a fcandalous villain, but she defied my malice; and that unless her papa would prosecute me like a thief as I was, fhe would not fray another night under his roof.—At the fame time, Gawky affuming a big look, told me, he fcorned what lies I could invent against him; but that if I pretended to asperse his wife, he would put me to death, by G-d.—To this I answered, " I wish to God I could meet with " thee in a defart, that I might have an opportunity " of revenging thy perfidy towards me, and rid the world of fuch a rascal—What hinders me this mo-" ment (faid I, feizing an old bottle that flood by) " from doing myfelf that justice?" I had no sooner armed myself in this manner, than Gawky and his father-in-law retired in fuch a hurry, that the one overturned the other, and they rolled together down stairs; while my mistress swooned away with fear; and her daughter asked if I intended to murder her.-I gave her to understand that nothing was farther from my intention; that I would leave her to the stings of her own conscience; but was firmly resolved to flit her husband's nose, whenever fortune should offer a convenient opportunity.—Then going down stairs, I met Lavement coming up trembling with the peftle in his hand, and Gawky behind armed with his fword pushing him forward.—I demanded a parley, and having affured them of my pacific disposition; Gawky exclaimed, "Ah! villain! you have "killed my dear wife,"-And the apothecary cried, "Ah coquin! vere is my child?"-" The lady (faid I) is above stairs, unhurt by me, and will a " few months hence (I believe) reward your con-" cern."-Here she called to them herself, and desired they would let the wretch go, and trouble themfelves no further about him. - To which her father confented, observing nevertheless, that my converfation was fort mysterieux. - Finding it impossible to vindicate my innocence, I left the house immediately, H 6 and

and went to the schoolmaster, with an intention of clearing myfelf to him, and asking his advice with regard to my future conduct; but, to my inexpressible vexation, was told he was gone to the country, where he would flay two or three days .- I returned with a design of consulting some acquaintance I had acquired in my master's neighbourhood; but my story had taken air, through the officiousness of the servants, and not one of my friends would vouchfafe me a hearing. -Thus I found myfelf, by the iniquity of mankind, in a much more deplorable condition than ever: for though I had been formerly as poor, my reputation was without blemish, and my health unimpaired till now; - but at present my good name was loft, my money gone, my friends were alienated, my body infected by a diffemper contracted in the course of an amour; and my faithful Strap, who alone could yield me pity and affiftance, absent I knew not where.

The first resolution I could take in this melancholy conjuncture, was to remove my cloaths to the house of the person with whom I had formerly lodg'd; where I remained two days, in hopes of getting another place, by the interest of Mr. Concordance, to whom I made no doubt of being able to vindicate my character; - but in this I reckoned without my host, for Lavement took care to be before-hand with me, and when I attempted to explain the whole affair to the schoolmaster, I found him so prepossessed against me, that he would scarce hear me to an end; but when I had finished my justification, shook his head, and beginning with his usual exclamation, "OC--ft! " faid, That won't go down with me. - I am very " forry I should have the misfortune of being con-" cerned in the affair, but however shall be more " cautious for the future-I will trust no man from 46 henceforward - no, not my father who begat me-" nor the brother who lay with me in my mother's womb-should Daniel rise from the dead I would

66 think

" think him an impostor, and were the genius of " truth to appear, would question its veracity."-I told him, that one day, it was possible, he might be convinced of the injury I had fuffered, and repent of his premature determination--- To which he answered, the proof of my innocence would make his bowels vibrate with joy; " but till that shall hap-" pen (continued he) I must beg to have no manner " of connection with you - my reputation is at stake " -O my good God! I shall be looked upon as vour accomplice and abettor—people will fay Iona-" than Wild was but a type of me- boys will hoot " at me as I pass along; and the cinder wenches " belch forth reproaches wafted in a gale impregnated " with gin-I shall be notorious-the very butt of " flander, and cloaca of infamy."-I was not in an humour to relish the climax of expressions upon which this gentleman valued himself in all his difcourses; but without any ceremony took my leave. curfed with every fentiment of horror, which my fituation could fuggest. - I confidered, however, in the intervals of my despondence, that I must in some fhape fuit my expence to my calamitous circumstances: and with that view hired an apartment in a garret near St. Giles's, at the rate of nine-pence per week. -In this place I resolved to perform my own cure. having first pawned three shirts to purchase medicines and support for the occasion.

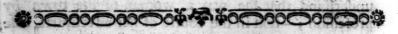
One day when I fat in this folitary retreat, musing upon the unhappiness of my fate, I was alarmed by agroan that issued from a chamber contiguous to mine, into which I immediately run, and found a woman stretched on a miserable truckle bed, without any visible signs of life. Having applied a smelling bottle to her nose, the blood began to revisit her cheeks, and she opened her eyes; but, good heaven! what were the emotions of my soul, when I discovered her to be the same individual lady, who had triumphed

over my heart, and to whose fate I had almost been inseparably joined! Her deplorable fituation filled my breaft with compassion, and every tender idea reviving in my imagination, I flew into her embrace. She knew me immediately; and straining me gently in her arms, fhed a torrent of tears, which I could not help encreasing: At length, casting a languishing look at me, she pronounced with a feeble voice, " Dear " Mr. Random, I do not deserve this concern at " your hands—I am a vile creature, who had a base " defign upon your person-suffer me to expiate "that and all my other crimes by a miserable death, " which will not fail to overtake me in a few hours." -I encouraged her as much as I could, told her I forgave all her intentions with regard to me; and that although my circumstances were extremely low. I would share my last farthing with her—In the mean time, begged to know the immediate cause of that fit from which she had just recovered, and I would endeavour by my skill to prevent any more fuch attacks.—She seemed very much affected with what I faid, took my hand and preffed it to her lips, faying, "You are too generous! I wish I could " live to express my gratitude—but alas! I perish for "want."-Then shutting her eyes, relapsed into another fwoon.-Such extremity of diffress must have waked the most obdurate heart to sympathy and compassion: What effect then must it have on mine, that was naturally prone to every tender paffion? I ran down stairs and fent my landlady to a chymist's shop for some cinnamon-water, while I returning to this unfortunate creature's chamber, used all the means in my power to bring her to herself: This with much difficulty I accomplished, and made her drink a glass of the cordial to recruit her spirits; then I prepared a little mulled red wine and a toaft, which having taken, the found herfelf thoroughly revived, and informed me, that she had not tasted food for eight and forty hours

hours before. - As I was impatient to know the occasion and nature of her calamity, she gave me to understand that she was a woman of the town by profession; -that in the course of her adventures, she found herfelf dangerously infected with a distemper to which all of her class are particularly subject; -- that her malady getting ground every day, she became loathfome to herfelf, and offensive to others; when she resolved to retire to some obscure corner, where she might be cured with as little noise and expence as possible; that she had accordingly chosen this place of retreat, and put herself into the hands of an advertifing doctor who having fleeced her of all the money fhe had, or could procure, left her three days ago in a worse condition than that in which he found her : —that except the cloaths on her back, she had pawned or fold every thing that belonged to her, to fatisfy that rapacious quack, and quiet the clamour of her landlady, who still perfished to turn her out into the street .-- After having moralized upon these particulars. I proposed that she should lodge in the same room with me, an expedient that would fave fome money; and affured her I would undertake her cure as well as my own, during which she should partake of all the conveniencies that I could afford to myfelf.—She embraced my offer with unfeigned acknowledgment. and I began to put it in practice immediately.-I found, in her, not only an agreeable companion, whose conversation greatly alleviated my chagrin, but also a careful nurse, who served me with the utmost fidelity and affection. One day, while I testified my furprise that a woman of her beauty, good sense, and education (for she had a large portion of each) could be reduced to fuch an infamous and miferable way of life as that of a profittute; she answered with a figh, " These very advantages were the cause of my " undoing. "-This remarkable reply inflamed my curiofity to fuch a degree, that I begged she would favour

24019

favour me with the particulars of her story, and she complied in these words.



CHAP. XXII.

The History of Miss WILLIAMS.

Y father was an eminent merchant in the city. who having, in the course of trade, suffered very considerable losses, retired in his old age with his wife to a small estate in the country, which he had purchased with the remains of his fortune. - At that time I being but eight years of age, was left in town for the convenience of education, boarded with an aunt, who was a rigid prefbyterian, and who confined me fo closely to what she called the duties of religion, that in time I grew weary of her doctrines, and by degrees conceived an aversion for the good books she daily recommended to my perusal. As I encreased in age, and appeared with a person not disagreeable, I contracted a good deal of acquaintance among my own fex, one of whom, after having lamented the restraint I was under from the narrowness of my aunt's fentiments, told me, I must now throw off the prejudices of opinion imbibed under her influence and example, and learn to think for myself; - for which purpole fhe advised me to read Shaftsbury, Tindal, Hobbs, and all the books that are remarkable for their deviation from the old way of thinking, and by comparing one with another, I should foon be able to form a system of my own. - I followed her advice, and whether it was owing to my prepossession against what I had formerly read, or the clearness of argument in these my new instructors, I know

know not, but I studied them with pleasure, and ina short time became a professed Free-thinker. Proud of my new improvement, I argued in all companies, and that with fuch fuccess, that I soon acquired, the reputation of a philosopher, and few people durst undertake me in a dispute .-- I grew vain upon my good fortune, and at length pretended to make my aunt a proselyte to my opinion; but she no sooner perceived my drift, than taking the alarm, the wrote to my father an account of my herefy, and conjured him, as he tendered the good of my foul, to remove me immediately from the dangerous place where I had contracted fuch finful principles: Accordingly, my father ordered me into the country, where I arrived in the fifteenth year of my age, and by his command, gave him a detail of all the articles of my faith, which he did not find so unreasonable as they had been represented. - Finding myself suddenly deprived of the company and pleasures of the town I grew melancholy, and it was some time before I could relish my fituation .-- But folitude became every day more and more familiar to me, and I confoled myfelf in my retreat with the enjoyment of a good library, at fuch times as were not employed in the management of the family, (for my mother had been dead three years) in vifiting, or some other party of rural diversion ---Having more imagination than judgment, I addicted myself too much to poetry and romance; and in fhort was looked upon as a very extraordinary person by every body in the country where I refided .-- I had one evening strayed with a book in my hand, into wood that bordered on the high road, at a little distance from my father's house; when a certain drunken squire, riding by, perceived me, and crying, " Z---ds! there's a charming creature!" alighted in a moment, catched me in his arms, and treated me so rudely, that I shrieked as loud as I could, and in the mean time opposed his violence with

with all the strength that rage and refentment could inspire .-- During this struggle, another horseman came up, who feeing a lady fo unworthily used, difmounted and flew to my affiftance .-- My ravisher, mad with disappointment, or provoked with the reproaches of the other gentleman, quitted me, and running to his horse, drew a pistol from the saddle and fired it at my protector, who happily received no damage, went up, and with the butt end of his whip, laid him proftrate on the ground, before he could use the other, which his antagonist immediately seized, and clapping to the fquire's breaft, threatned to put him to death for his cowardice and treachery: Upon this I interposed and begged his life, which was granted to my request, after he had asked pardon, and Iwore his intention was only to obtain a kifs. - However, my defender thought proper to unload the other pistol, and throw away the flints, before he gave him his liberty. - This courteous stranger conducted me home, where my father having learned the fignal fervice he had done me, loaded him with careffes, and infifted on his lodging that night at our house. - If the obligation he had conferred upon me justly inspired me with fentiments of gratitude, his appearance and conversation feemed to intitle him to somewhat more. -He was about the age of two and twenty, among the tallest of the middle fize; had chefnut-coloured hair which he wore tied up in a ribbon; a high polished fore-head, a nose inclining to the aquiline, lively blue eyes, red pouting lips, teeth as white as fnow, and a certain opennels of countenance, -but what need I describe any more particulars of his perfon? I hope you will do me the justice to believe I do not flatter, when I say he was the exact resemblance of you; and if I had not been well acquainted with his family and pedigree, I should have made no scruple of concluding that you was his brother--He spoke little, and seemed to have no reserve, for what he he faid was ingenuous, fenfible and uncommon.—In short, (said she, bursting into tears) he was formed for the ruin of our fex.-His behaviour was modest and respectful, but his looks were so significant that I could eafily observe, he secretly blessed the occasion that introduced him to my acquaintance. - We learned from his discourse that he was eldest son of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood, to whose name we were no strangers; that he had been to visit an acquaintance in the country, from whose house he was returning home, when my shrieks brought him to my refcue. -- All nightlong my imagination formed a thoufand ridiculous expectations: There was fo much of knight-errantry in this gentleman's coming to the relief of a damfel in diffres, with whom he immediately became enamoured, that all I had read of love and chivalry recurred to my fancy, and I looked upon myfelf as a princels in some region of romance, who being delivered from the power of a brutal giant or fatyr by a generous Oroondates, was bound in gratitude, as well as led by inclination, to yield up my affections to him without referve. In vain did I endeavour to chaftife these foolish conceits by reflexions more reafonable and severe: The amusing images took full possession of my mind, and my dreams represented my hero fighing at my feet, in the language of a despairing lover.-Next morning after breakfast he took his leave, when my father begged the favour of a further acquaintance with him; to which he replied by a compliment to him, and a look to me so full of eloquence and tenderness, that my whole foul received the fost impression.—In a short time he repeated his visit; and as a recital of the particular steps he purfued to ruin me, would be too tedious and impertinent, let it suffice to say, he made it his business to infinuate himself into my esteem, by convincing me of his own good fense, and at the same time flattering my understanding: This he performed in the most artful manner, by seeming to contradict me often through misapprehension, that I might have an opportunity of clearing myfelf, the more to my own honour-Having thus secured my good opinion, he began to give me some tokens of a particular passion founded on a veneration for the qualities of my mind, and as an accidental ornament, admir'd the beauties of my person; till at length, being fully persuaded of his conquest, he chose a proper season for the theme, and disclos'd his love in terms so ardent and sincere, that it was impossible for me to disguise the sentiments of my heart, and he received my approbation with the most lively transport. After this mutual declaration, we contrived to meet more frequently, in private interviews, where we enjoy'd the conversation of one another, in all the elevation of fancy and impatience of hope, that reciprocal adoration can inspire. ——He professed his honourable intentions, of which I made no question, lamented the avaricious disposition of his father, who had deftin'd him for the arms of another, and vowed eternal fidelity with fuch an appearance of candour and devotion that I became a dupe to his deceit, and in an evil hour crowned his eager defire with full possession. - Cursed be the day on which I gave away my innocence and peace for a momentary gratification which has entail'd upon me fuch mifery and horror! curfed be my beauty that first attracted the attention of the feducer! curfed be my education, that by refining my fentiments, made my heart the more fulceptible I curied be my good fense that fixed me to one object, and taught me the preference I enjoyed was but my due! Had I been ugly, no body would have tempted me; had I been ignorant, the charms of my person would not have attened for the coarseness of my conversation; had I been giddy my vanity would have divided my inclinations, and my ideas would have been for diffused, that I should never have listened to the enchantments of one alone. But But to return to my unfortunate flory; we gave a loose to guilty pleasure, which for some months banished every other concern.-At last by degrees, his visits became less frequent, and his behaviour less warm: I perceived his coldness, my heart took the alarm, my tears reproached him, and I infifted upon the performance of his promife to espouse me, that whatever should happen, my reputation might be safe: He feemed to acquiesce in my proposal, and left me on pretence of finding a proper clergyman to unite us in the bands of wedlock .- But alas! the inconstant had no intention to return: I waited a whole week with the utmost impatience; fometimes doubting his honour, at other times inventing excuses for him, and condemning myfelf for harbouring the least fuspicion of his faith. - At Jength, I understood from a gentleman who dined at our house, that this perfidious wretch was on the point of fetting out for London with his bride, to buy cloaths for their approaching nuptials.—This information diffracted me! the more fo, as I found myself some months gone with child, and reflected, that it would be impossible to conceal my difgrace, which would not only ruin the character I had acquired in the country, but also bring the grey hairs of an indulgent parent with forrow to the grave. Rage took possession of my foul; I denounced a thousand imprecations, and formed as many schemes of revenge against the traitor who had undone me! Then my resentment would subfide to filent forrow: I recalled the tranquility I had loft, I wept over my infatuation, and fometimes a ray of hope would intervene, and for a moment cheer my drooping heart; I would revolve all the favourable circumstances of his character, repeat the vows he made, ascribe his absence to the vigilance of a suspicious father who compelled him to a match his foul abhorred, and comfort myfelf with the expectation of feeing him before the thing should be brought to any terms

0

d

d

IS

- YV

ut

terms of agreement. - But how vain was my imagination? The villain left me without remorfe, and in a few days the news of his marriage spread all over the country.-My horror was then inconceivable! and had not the defire of revenge diverted the refolution. I should infallibly have put an end to my miserable life. - My father observed the symptoms of my defpair; and though I have good reason to believe, he gueffed the cause, was at a great deal of pains to seem ignorant of my affliction, while he endeavoured with paternal fondness to alleviate my distress. I saw his concern, which increased my anguish, and raised my fury against the author of my calamity to an implacable degree. Having furnished myself with a little money, I made an elopement from this unhappy parent in the night-time, and about break of day, arrived at a small town from whence a stage-coach set out for London, in which I embarked, and next day alighted in town; the spirit of revenge having fupported me all the way against every other reflection.-My first care was to hire a lodging, in which I kept myself very retired, having assumed a feigned name, that my character and fituation might be the better concealed. It was not long before I found out the house of my ravisher, whither I immediately repaired in a transport of rage, determined to act some desperate deed for the satisfaction of my despair, though the hurry of my spirits would not permit me to concert or resolve upon a particular plan. When I demanded admission to Lothario (so let me call him) I was defired to fend up my name and bufiness; but this I refused, telling the porter I had business for his mafter's private ear: Upon which I was conducted into a parlour until he should be informed of my request. - There I remained about a quarter of an hour, when a fervant entered and told me his mafter was engaged with company, and begged to be excufed at that time. - My temper could hold out no long-

After

er: I pulled a poignard from my bosom where I had concealed it, and rushing out, flew up stairs like a fury, exclaiming, "Where is this perfidious villain! " could I once plunge this dagger into his false heart, "I should then die satisfied." The noise I made alarmed not only the fervants, but the company alfo, who hearing my threats, came forwards to the staircase to see what was the matter. I was seized, disarmed, and with-held by two footmen; and in this fituation felt the most exquisite torture in beholding my undoer approach with his young wife. I could not endure the fight, was deprived of my fenses, and fell into a fevere fit, during which I know not how I was treated; but when I recovered the use of reflection, found myself on a bed in a paultry apartment, where I was attended by an old woman, who asked a thousand impertinent questions relating to my condition; and informed me that my behaviour had thrown the whole family into confusion; that Lothario affirmed I was mad, and proposed to have me fent to Bedlam; but my lady perfuaded herself there was more in my conduct than he cared should be known, and had taken to her bed on bare fuspicion, having first ordered that I should be narrowly looked to. I heard all she said without making any other reply, than defiring the would do me the favour to call a chair; but this (she told me) could not be done without her master's consent, which, however, was eafily procured, and I was conveyed to my own lodgings in a flate of mind that baffles all description. The agitation of my thoughts produced a fever, which brought on a miscarriage; and I believe it is well for my conscience that heaven thus disposed of my burden; for let me own to you with penitence and horror, if I had brought a living child into the world, my frenzy would have prompted me to facrifice the little innocent to my refentment of the father's infide. lity.

5

d

t

c,

e

n

11

3;

or

t-

ıy

ın

er

u-

After this event my rage abated, and my hate became more deliberate and calm; when one day, my landlady informed me that there was a gentleman below who defired to fee me, having fomething of confequence to impart, which he was fure would contribute to my peace of mind. - I was exceedingly alarmed at this declaration, which I attempted to interpret a thousand ways; and before I came to any determination he entered my room, with an apology for intruding upon me against my knowledge or consent:--I furveyed him fome time, and not being able to recollect his face, demanded with a faultering accent, what his business was with me?—Upon which, he desired I would give him a particular audience, and he did not doubt of communicating fomething that would conduce to my fatisfaction and repose. As I thought myself sufficiently guarded against any violence, I granted his request, and bid the woman withdraw. The stranger then advancing, gave me to understand that he was well acquainted with the particulars of my story, having been informed of them from Lothario's own mouth—that from the time he knew my misfortunes, he had entertained a detestation for the author of them; which had of late been increased and inflamed to a defire of revenge, by a piece of dishonourable conduct towards him-that hearing of my melancholy fituation, he had come with an intention of offering his affiftance and comfort, and was ready to espouse my quarrel and forthwith take vengeance on my feducer, provided I would grant him one confideration, which (he hoped) I should see no reason to refuse.-Had all the artifice of hell been employed in composing a persuasive, it could not have had a more instantaneous or favourable effect than this difcourse had upon me. I was transported with a delirium of gloomy joy; I hugged my companion in my arms, and vowed that if he would make good his promise, my soul and body should be at his disposal.

The contract was made; he devoted himself to my revenge, undertook to murder Lothario that very night, and to bring me an account of his death before morning. Accordingly, about two of the clock, he was introduced to my chamber, and affured me my perfidious lover was no more; that although he was not entitled to fuch an honourable proceeding, he had fairly challenged him to the field, where he upbraided him with his treachery towards me, for whom (he told him) his fword was drawn, and after a few passes left him weltering in his blood.—I was fo favaged by my wrongs, that I delighted in the recital of this adventure, made him repeat the particulars, feafted my eyes with the blood that remained on his cloaths and fword, and yielded up my body as a recompence for the fervice he had done me. My imagination was fo engroffed by these ideas, that in my fleep I dreamed Lothario appeared before me, pale, mangled and bloody, blamed my rashness, protested his innocence, and pleaded his own cause so pathetically, that I was convinced of his fidelity, and waked in a fit of horror and remorfe. - My bed-fellow endeavoured to footh, confole, and persuade me that I had but barely done justice to myself. - I dropt afleep again, and the fame apparition recurred to my fancy.-In short, I passed the night in great misery, and looked upon my avenger with fuch abhorrence, that in the motning, perceiving my aversion, he infinuated there was still a possibility of Lothario's recovery; it was true, he left him wounded on the ground, but not quite dead; and perhaps his hurts might not be mortal.—At these words I started up, bid him fly for intelligence, and if he could not bring me tidings of Lothario's fafety, at least confult his own and never return, for I was refolved to furrender myself to justice, and declare all that I knew of the affair, that, if possible, I might expiate my own guilt, by incurring the rigours of a fincere re-VOL. I. pentance

1

t

I

.

d

-

y

d

)-

ý

on ly

ce

n-

on

ed

la

if-

le-

in

his

fal.

he

pentance and ignominious death.-He very coolly represented the unreasonableness of my prejudice against him, who had done nothing but what his love of me inspired, and honour justified; - that now he had, at the risk of his life, been subservient to my revenge, I was about to discard him as an infamous agent occasionally necessary: and that even if he should be so lucky as to bring news of Lothario's fafety, it was probable my former resentment might revive, and I would upbraid him with having failed in his undertaking .- I affured him that, on the contrary, he should be dearer to me than ever, as I then should be convinced he acted more on the principles of a man of honour, than on those of a mercenary affaffin, and scorned to take away the life of an adversary (how inveterate soever) which fortune had put in his power. - " Well then, madam, (faid he) whatever may have happened, I shall find it no difficult matter to acquit myself in point of honour."—And took his leave in order to enquire into the confequences of his duel.—I was now more fensible than ever of the degrees of guilt and misery; all the affliction I had fuffered hitherto was owing to my own credulity and weakness, and my conscience could only accuse me of venal crimes, but now that I looked upon myfelf as a murderer, it is impossible to express the terrors of my imagination, which was inceffantly haunted by the image of the deceafed, and my bosom stung with the most exquisite agonies, of which I saw no end.—At length, Horatio (for so I shall call my keeper) returned, and telling me I had nothing to fear, delivered into my hands a billet containing these words.

his owle and never return, for Lwas , MAGAM fur-

AS I understand it is of consequence to your peace, I take this liberty to inform you, that the wounds I received from Horatio are not mor-

" tal. This fatisfaction my humanity could not deny even to a person who has endeavoured to di" sturb the repose, as well as destroy the life of

Lothario.

ייי פובר ולנוסס לוכ ווים

Being well acquainted with his hand, I had no reafon to suspect an imposition in this letter, which I read over and over with a transport of joy, and careffed Horatio fo much, that he appeared the happiest man alive. Thus was I won from despair by the menaces of a greater misfortune than that which depressed me .- Griefs are like usurpers, the most powerful deposes all the rest-But my raptures were not lafting—that very letter which in a manner re-effablished my tranquillity, in a little time banished my peace. His unjust reproaches, while they waked my refentment, recalled my former happiness, and filled my foul with rage and forrow.-Horatio, perceiving the fituation of my mind, endeavoured to divert my chagrin, by treating me with all the amusements and entertainments of the town. I was gratified with every indulgence I could defire; introduced into the company of other kept mistresses, by whom an uncommon deference was paid to me; and I began to lose all remembrance of my former condition, when an accident brought it back to my view with all its interesting circumstances. - Diverting myself one day with fome news papers, which I had not before perufed, the following advertisement attracted my atfor street the enjoyment of tention. ant pairs aright the

I

ur

at

r-

al.

[&]quot;Whereas a young gentlewoman disappeared from her father's house, in the county of ——,

about the end of September, on account (as is sup-

[&]quot; been as yet heard of. Whoever will give any in-

[&]quot; formation about her to Mr. — of Gray's-inn,

thall be handsomely rewarded; or if the will return to the arms of her disconsolate parent, she " will be received with the utmost tenderness, whatever reason she may have to think otherwise, and may be the means of prolonging the life of a father, already weighed down almost to the grave with age and forrow." of maiorestion in the litter, which I

This pathetic remonstrance had such an effect on me, that I was fully resolved to return like the prodigal fon, and implore the forgiveness of him who gave me life; but alas! upon inquiry, I found he had paid his debt to nature a month before, lamenting my absence to his last hour, having left his fortune to a stranger as a mark of his resentment of my unkind and undutiful behaviour.-Penetrated with remorfe on this occasion, I funk into the most profound melancholy, and confidered myself as the immediate cause of his death. - I lost all relish for company, and indeed most of my acquaintances no sooner perceived my change of temper, than they abandoned me. Horatio, difgusted at my insensibility, or (which is more probable) cloyed with possession, became colder and colder every day, till at last he left me altogether, without making any apology for his conduct, or fecuring me against the miseries of want, as a man of honour ought to have done, confidering the Thare he had in my ruin; for I afterwards learned that the quarrel between Lothario and him, was a ftory trumped up to rid the one of my importunities, and give the other the enjoyment of my person, which, it feems, he lusted after, upon feeing me at the house of my feducer. - Reduced to this extremity, I curfed my own fimplicity, uttered horrid imprecations -against the treachery of Horatio; and as I became every day more and more familiarized to the loss of innocence, refolved to be revenged on the fex in general, by practifing their own arts upon themselves. --Nor

-Nor was an opportunity long wanting: an old gentlewoman under pretence of fympathizing, visited me, and after having condoled me on my misfortunes, and professed a disinterested friendship, began to display the art of her occupation, in encomiums on my beauty, and invectives against the wretch who had forfaken me; infinuating withal that it would be my own fault if I did not still make my fortune by the extraordinary qualifications with which nature had endowed me. - I foon understood her drift, and gave her fuch encouragement to explain herfelf, that we came to an agreement immediately to divide the profits of my proftitution, accruing from fuch gallants as she should introduce to my acquaintance. The first stroke of my distimulation, was practifed upon a certain J---ge, to whom I was recommended by this matron, as an innocent creature just arrived from the country. He was so transported with my appearance and feigned fimplicity, that he paid a hundred guineas for the possession of me for one night only, during which I behaved in fuch a manner, as to make him perfectly well-pleafed with his purchase.

d

fe ed ns ne of

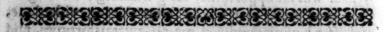
re-

es.

I 3 CHAP

Crime is here incuttoned arrell.

the contract the contract of t



CHAP. XII.

She is interrupted by a bailiff, who arrests, and carries her to the Marshalsea—I accompany her—bring witnesses to prove she is not the person named in the writ—the bailiff is fain to give her a present and discharge her—we shift our lodging—she resumes her story and ends it—my resections thereupon—she makes me acquainted with the progress of a common woman of the town—resolves to quit that way of life.

TER flory was here interrupted by a rap at the door, which I no fooner opened, than three or four terrible fellows rushed in one, one of whom accustomed my fellow-lodger thus :-- "Madam, your fervant -you must do me the favour to come " along with me-I have got a writ against you."-While the bailiff (for so he was) spoke thus, his followers furrounded the prisoners, and began to handle her very roughly. - This treatment incenfed me fo much, that I fnatched up the poker, and would certainly have used it in defence of the lady, without any regard to the strength and number of her adversaries, had she not begged me with a composure of countenance, for which I could not account, to use no violence in her behalf, which could be of no fervice to her, but might be very detrimental to myself.—Then turning to the leader of this formidable troop, she defired to fee the warrant, and having perused it, said with a faultering voice, "I am not the person whose name is here mentioned; arrest me at your peril." -" Ay, ay, Madam (replied the catchpole) we " shall prove your identity. - In the mean time,

" whether will you be pleafed to be carried to my " house or to jail ?"-" If I must be confined (said " she) I would rather be in your house than in a " common jail."-" Well, well, (answered he) if " you have money enough in your pocket, you shall be entertained like a princess."—But when she acquainted him with her poverty, he swore he never gave credit, and ordered one of his myrmidons to call a coach, to carry her to the Marshalsea at once. -While this was a doing she took me aside, and bid me be under no concern on her account, for she knew how to extricate herfelf from this difficulty very foon, and perhaps gain fomething by the occafion. - Although her discourse was a mystery to me, I was very well pleased with her assurance, and when the coach came to the door, offered to accompany her to prison, to which, after much intreaty, the confented.-When we arrived at the gate of the Marshalfea, our conductor alighted, and having demanded entrance, presented the writ to the turnkey, who no fooner perceived the name of Elizabeth Cary, than he cried, "Ah hah! my old acquaintance Bett! I'm. glad to see thee with all my heart." - So saying he opened the coach-door, and helped her to dismount; but when he observed her face, he started back, saying," Z-dsl who have we got here ?"-The bailiff, alarmed at this interrogation, cried with fome emotion, "Who the devil should it be, but the prisoner " Elizabeth Cary?" The turnkey replied, "That "Elizabeth Cary !- I'll be damned if that's Eliza-" beth Cary, more than my grandmother. D-n "my blood, I know Bett Cary as well as if I had " made her."-Here the lady thought fit to interpose, and tell the catchpole, if he had taken her word for it at first, he might have saved himself and her a great deal of trouble.—" It may be fo (answered he) "but by G-d, I'll have further evidence that you " are not the person before you and I part,"-" Yes,

e

y

s,

2-

)-

to

en

he

id

se

1."

we

ne,

"yes, (faid she) you shall have further evidence to your cost."—Upon this we adjourned into the lodge, and called for a bottle of wine, where my companion wrote a direction to two of her acquaintance, and begged the favour of me to go to their lodgings, and request them to come to her immediately: I found them together at a house in Bridgesffreet, Drury-lane, and as they were luckily unengaged, they fet out with me in a hackney-coach without hesitation, after I had related the circumstances of the affair, which flattered them with hopes of feeing a bailiff trounced; for there is an antipathy as natural between the whores and bailiffs, as that fubliffing between mice and cats. -- Accordingly. when they entered the lodge, they embraced the prifoner very affectionately by the name of Nancy Williams; and asked how long she had been nabb'd, and for what ?-On hearing the particulars of her adventure repeated, they offered to fwear before a justice of peace that the was not the person mentioned in the writ, whom, it feems, they all knew; but the bailiff, who by this time was convinced of his mistake, told them he would not put them to that trouble. "Ladies (faid he) there's no harm done-you shall give me leave to treat you with another bottle, and then we'll part friends."-This propofal was not at all relished by the sisterhood; and miss Williams told him: Sure he did not imagine her fuch a fool as to be fatisfied with a paultry glass of four wine. - Here the turnkey interrupted her, by affirming with an oath, that the wine was as good as ever was tipped over tongue.—" Well (continued she) that may be-but was it the best of champaign, it is no recompence for the damage I have fuffered both in character and health, by being wrongfully ss dragged to jail-At this rate no innocent person is fafe, fince an officer of justice, out of malice, private pique, or mistake, may injure and oppress ss the " the fubiect with impunity-but, thank heaven. I " live under the protection of laws that will not fuf-" fer fuch infults to pass unpunished, and I know " very well how to procure redrefs."-Mr. Vulture (for that was the bailiff's name) finding he had to deal with one who would not be imposed upon, began to look very fullen and perplexed, and leaning his forehead on his hand, entered into a deliberation with himself, which lasted a few minutes, and then broke out in a volley of dreadful curses against the old b-ch our landlady (as he called her) for having misinformed him. - After much wrangling and swearing, the matter was referred to the decision of the turnkey, who calling for the other bottle, mulcted the bailiff in all the liquor that had been drank. coach-hire, and a couple of guineas for the use of the plaintiff.—The money was immediately deposited : mifs Williams gratified the two evidences with one half, and putting the other in her pocketdrove home. with me, leaving the catchpole grumbling over his lofs, yet pleafed in the main, for having fo cheaply got clear of a bufiness that might have cost him ten times the fum, and his place to boot. This guinea was a very feafonable relief to us, who were reduced to great necessity, fix of my shirts and almost all my cloaths, except those on my back, being either pawned or fold for our maintenance before this happened .- As we refented the behaviour of our landlady, our first care was to provide ourselves with another lodging, whither we removed next day, with an intention to keep ourselves as retired as possible until our cure should be completed .- When we were fixed in our new habitation, I intreated her to finish. the story of her life, which she pursued in this manner :

The fuccess of our experiment on the J-ge, encouraged us to practise the same deceit on others, and

LS

my

imp virginity was five times fold to good purpose; -but this harvest lasted not long, my character taking air, and my directress deserting me for some new whereupon I took lodging near Charingcross, at two guineas per, week, and began to entertain company in a publick manner: - But my income being too small to defray my expence, I was obliged to retrench, and enter into articles with the porters of certain taverns, who undertook to find employment enough for me, provided I would share my profits with them. - Accordingly, I was almost every night engaged with company, among whom I was exposed to every mortification, danger and abuse, that flow from drunkenness, brutality and disease. How miserable is the condition of a courtezan, whose bulinels it is to footh, fuffer, and obey the dictates of rage, infolence and luft !- As my spirit was not fufficiently humbled to the will, nor my temper calculated for the conversation of my gallants, it was impossible for me to overcome an aversion I felt for my profession, which manifested itself in a settled gloom on my countenance, and difgusted those sons of mirth and riot fo much, that I was frequently used in a shocking manner, and kicked down stairs with difgrace.—The messengers seeing me disagreeable to their benefactors and employers, feldom - troubled me with a call, and I began to find myfelf almost totally neglected. To contribute towards my fupport, I was fain to fell my watch, rings, trinkets, with the best part of my cloaths; and I was one evening muling by myfelf, on the milery before me, when I received a message from a bagnio, whither I repaired in a chair, and was introduced to a gentle--man dreffed like an officer, with whom I supped tête a tête, in a fumptuous manner, and after drinking a hearty glass of champaign, went to bed.-In the morning when I awoke I found my gallant had got up and drawing afide the curtain, could not perceive him

him in the room. This gave me fome uneafinefs, but as he might have retired on some necessary occafion. I waited a full hour for his return; and then in the greatest perplexity rose up, and rung the bell. When the waiter came to the door, he found it. locked, and defired admittance, which I granted, after observing with great surprize, that the key remained on the infide, as when we went to bed .- I no fooner enquired for the captain, than the fellow staring with a distracted look, cried, "How, mas dam! is he not a-bed!" And when he was fatisfied as to that, ran into a closet adjoining to the chamber, the window of which he found open.-Through this, the adventurer had got upon a wall, from whence he dropped down into a court and escaped; leaving me to be answerable, not only for the reckoning, but also for a large filver tankard and posset bowl, which he had carried off with him.-It is impossible to describe the consternation I was under, when I saw myself detained as a thief's accomplice; for I was looked upon in that light, and carried before a justice, who mistaking my confusion for a fign of guilt, committed me after a fhort examination to Bridewell, having advised me, as the only means to fave my life, to turn evidence, and impeach my confederate. - I now concluded, the vengeance of heaven had overtaken me, and that I must foon finish my career by an ignominious death. This reflection funk fo deep into my foul, that I was for fome days deprived of my reason, and actually believed myself in hell, tormented by fiends: Indeed, there needs not a very extravagant imagination toform that; for of all the scenes on earth, that of Bridewell approaches nearest the idea I had always. entertained of the infernal regions. - Here I faw nothing but rage, anguish and impiety; and heard nothing but groans, curses and blasphemy. - In the midst of this hellish crew, I was subjected to the tythe remained forme to a determine ranny

The ADVENTURES of

ranny of a barbarian, who imposed upon me talks that I could not possibly perform, and then punished my incapacity with the utmost rigour and inhumanity. I was often whipt into a fwoon, and lashed out of it, during which miferable intervals, I was robbed by my fellow-prisoners of every thing about me, even to my cap, shoes and stockings: I was not only destitute of necessaries, but even of food, so that my wretchedness was extreme. Not one of my acquaintance to whom I imparted my fituation, would grant me the least succour or regard, on pretence of my being committed for theft; and my landlord refused to part with some of my own cloaths which I fent for, because I was indebted to him for a week's lodging-Overwhelmed with calamity, I grew defperate, and refolved to put an end to my grievances and life together; for this purpose I got up in the middle of the night, when I thought every body round me afleep, and fixing one end of my handkerchief to a large hook in the ceiling, that supported the scales on which the hemp is weighed, I stood upon a chair, and making a noose on the other end, put my neck into it, with an intention to hang myfelf. but before I could adjust the knot, I was furprifed and prevented by two women who had been awake all the while, and suspected my design.-In the morning my attempt was published among the prisoners, and punished with thirty stripes, the pain of which co-operating with my disappointment and diffrace, bereft me of my fenses and threw me into an ecstafy of madness, wherein I tore the flesh from my bones with my teeth, and dashed my head against the pavement. - So that they were obliged to fet a watch over me, to reftrain me from doing further mischief to myself and others. - This fit of phrenzy continued three days, at the end of which I grew calm and fullen; but as the defire of making away with myself still remained, I came to a determination

5. GRODERICK RADOM. 139 181

tion of starving myself to death, and with that view refused all sustenance. Whether it was owing to the want of opposition, or to the weakness of nature, I know not, but on the fecond day of my fast, I found my refolution confiderably impaired, and the calls of hunger almost insupportable. - At this critical conjuncture a lady was brought into the prison with whom I had contracted an acquaintance while I lived with Horatio; she was then on the same footing as I was, but afterwards quarrelling with her gallant, and not finding another to her mind, altered her scheme of life, and set up a coffee-house among the hundreds of Drury, where she entertained gentlemen with claret, arrack, and the choice of half a dozen of damsels, who lived in her house. This serviceable matron having neglected to gratify a certain i-ce for the connivance she enjoyed, was indicted at the quarter fessions, in consequence of which her bevy was dispersed, and herself committed to Bridewell.—She had not been long there, before the learned my difaster, and coming up to me, after a compliment of condolance, enquired into the particulars of my fate: While we were engaged in discourse together, the master came and told me that the fellow on whose account I had suffered was taken, that he had confessed the theft, and cleared me of any concern in the affair; for which reason, he, the master, had orders to discharge me, and that I was from that moment free. This piece of news foon banished all thoughts of death, and had fuch an inftantaneous effect on my countenance, that Mrs. Coupler (the lady then present) hoping to find her account in me, very generously offered to furnish me with what necessaries I wanted, and take me into her own house, as foon as the could compromife matters with the j-ces, the conditions of her offer, were, that I should pay three Guineas weekly for my board, and a reasonable consideration besides for the use of such cloaths

cloaths and ornaments as the thould fupply me with, to be deducted from the first profits of my embraces. -These were hard terms; but not to be rejected by one who was turned out helpless and naked into the wide world, without a friend to pity or affift her. -I therefore embraced her proposal, and she being bailed in a few hours, took me home with her in a coach. As I was by this time conscious of having formerly disgusted my admirers by my referved and haughty behaviour, I now endeavoured to conquer that disposition, and the sudden change of my fortune giving me a flow of spirits, I appeared in the most winning and gay manner I could assume. Having the advantage of a good voice and education, I exerted my talents to the uttermost, and soon became the favourite with all company. - This fuccess alarmed the pride and jealoufy of Mrs. Coupler, who could not bear the thoughts of being eclipfed: She therefore made a merit of her envy, and whisper'd among her customers that I was unfound.—There needed no more to ruin my reputation and blast my prosperity; every body shunned me with marks of aversion and disdain, and in a very short time I was as folitary as ever. Want of gallants was attended with want of money to fatisfy my malicious landlady, who having purposely given me credit to the amount of eleven pounds, took out a writ against me, and I was arrested in her own house.—Though the room was crowded with people, when the bailiff entered, not one of them had compassion enough to molify my profecutrix, far less to pay the debt; they even laughed at my tears, and one of them bid me be of good cheer, for I should not want admirers in Newgate. At that instant, a sea lieutenant came in, and feeing my plight, began to enquire into the circumstances of my misfortune, when this wit advised him to keep clear of me, for I was a fire-ship .- " A fire-" ship! (replied the failor) more like a poor galley

" in distress that has been boarded by such a fire-ship " as you; if so be the case, the stands in more need " of affistance.-Harkee, my girl, how far have you " over-run the constable?"-I told him that the debt amounted to eleven pounds, besides the expence of the writ-" An that be all (faid he) you shan't " go to the bilboes this bout."-And taking out his purse, paid the money, discharged the bailiff, and telling me, I had got into the wrong port, advised me to feek out a more convenient harbour, where I could be fafely hove down, for which purpose he made me a present of five guineas more - I was fo touched with this fingular piece of generofity, that for some time I had not power to thank him - However as foon as I had recollected myfelf, I begged the favour of him to go with me to the next tavern, where I explained the nature of my disaster, and convinced him of the falshood of what was reported to my prejudice so effectually, that he from that moment attached himself to me, and we lived in great harmony together, until he was obliged to go to sea, where he perished in a storm.

y

S

h

0

of

as

as

ot

iy

en

of

W-

nd

m-

im

re-

ley

in

Having loft my benefactor, and almost consumed the remains of his bounty, I faw myself in danger of relapfing into my former necessity, and began to be very uneasy at the prospect of bailiffs and jails; when one of the fifterhood, a little stale, advised me to take lodgings in a part of the town where I was unknown, and pass for an heiress, whereby I might entrap fomebody to be my husband, who would poffibly be able to allow me an handsome maintenance, or at worst screen me from the dread and danger of a prison, by becoming liable for whatever debts I should contract.—I approved of this scheme, towards the execution of which my companion clubbed her wardrobe, and undertook to live with me in quality of my maid; with the proviso, that she should be reimburfed, and handsomely considered out of the profits

profits of my fuccess.—She was immediately detach. ed to look out for a convenient place, and that very day hired a genteel apartment in Park-street, whither I moved in a coach loaded with her baggage and my own.-I made my first appearance in a blue riding habit trimmed with filver; and my maid acted her part fo artfully, that in a day or two, my fame was fpread all over the neighbourhood, and I was faid to be a rich heires just arrived from the country. - This report brought a fwarm of gay young fellows about me; but I foon found them out to be all indigent adventurers like myself, who crowded to me like crows to a carrion, with a view of preying upon my fortune. —I maintained, however, the appearance of wealth as long as possible, in hopes of gaining some admirer more for my purpose; and at length attracted the regard of one who would have fatisfied my wishes; and managed matters fo well, that a day was actually fixed for our nuptials: In the interim, he begged leave to introduce an intimate friend to me, which request as I could not refuse, I had the extreme mortification and furprise, to see next night, in that friend, my old keeper Horatio, who no fooner beheld me than he changed colour; but had presence of mind to advance and falute me, bidding me (with a low voice) be under no apprehension, for he would not expose me.—In spite of this assurance, I could not recover myself so far, as to entertain them, but withdrew to my chamber on pretence of a fevere head-ach, to the no small concern of my adorer, who took his leave in the tenderest manner, and went off with his friend.

Having imparted my fituation to my companion, fhe found it high time for us to decamp, and that without any noise, because we were not only indebted to our landlady, but also to several tradesmen in the neighbourhood.—Our retreat, (therefore) was concerted and executed in this manner: Having packed

t

f

o h

t

u

11

Ti

to

h

packed up all our cloaths and moveables in small parcels, the, (on pretence of fetching cordials for me) carried them at feveral times, to the house of an acquaintance, where the likewife procured a lodging, to which we retired in the middle of the night, when every other body in the house was asleep. — I was now obliged to aim at lower game, and accordingly spread my nets among trades people; but found them all too phlegmatic or cautious for my art and attractions; till at last I became acquainted with you, on whom I practifed all my dexterity; not that I believed you had any fortune or expectation of one, but that I might transfer the burthen of fuch debts as I had incurred or should contract, from myself to another, and at the same time avenge myself of your sex, by rendering miserable, one who bore such resemblance to the wretch who ruined me; - but heaven preferved you from my fnares, by the discovery you made, which was owing to the negligence of my maid in leaving the chamber-door unlocked, when fhe went to buy fugar for breakfast.—The person in bed with me, was a gentleman whom I had allured the night before, as he walked homeward pretty much elevated with liquor; for by this time my condition was fo low, that I was forced to turn out in the twilight, to the streets in hopes of prey. - When I found myself detected and forfaken by you, I was fain to move my lodging, and dwell two pair of stairs higher than before: My companion being difappointed in her expectations, left me, to trade upon her own bottom, and I had no other resource, than to venture forth, like the owls, in the dark, to pick up a precarious and uncomfortable sublistence. I have often fauntered between Ludgate-hill and Charing-cross, a whole winter-night, exposed not only to the inclemency of the weather, but likewise to the rage of hunger and thirst, without being so happy as to meet with one cully; then creep up to my garret, in

١,

e

d

W

ot

ot

1-

h,

is

th

n,

at

yt-

in

ras

ng

ed

in a deplorable, draggled condition, fneak to bed, and try to bury my appetite and forrows in fleep.—When I lighted on some rake or tradesman reeling home drunk, I frequently suffered the most brutal treatment, in spite of which I was obliged to affect gaiety and good humour, tho' my soul was stung with resentment and disdain, and my heart loaded with grief and affliction.—In the course of these nocturnal adventures, I was infected with the disease that in a short time render'd me the object of my own abhorrence, and drove me to the retreat, where your benevolence rescued me from the jaws of death.

So much candour and good fense appeared in this lady's narration, that I made no scruple of believing every fyllable of what fhe faid; and expressed my aftonishment at the variety of miseries she had undergone, in fo little time; for all her misfortunes had happened within the compass of two years. - I compared her fituation with my own, and found it a thousand times more wretched: I had endured hardthips, 'tis true; my whole life had been a feries of fuch, and when I looked foreward, the prospect was not much bettered—but then they were become habitual to me, and confequently I could bear them with less difficulty. - If one scheme of life should not fucceed, I could have recourse to another, and so to a third, veering about to a thousand different shifts, according to the emergencies of my fate, without forfeiting the dignity of my character, beyond a power of retrieving it, or fubjecting myfelf wholly to the caprice and barbarity of the world. On the other hand, the had known and relished the sweets of profperity, the had been brought up under the wings of an indulgent parent, in all the delicacies to which her fex and rank entitled her; and without any extravagance of hope, entertained herfelf with the view of uninterrupted happiness thro' the whole scene of life.

life. - How fatal then, how tormenting, how intolerable must her reverse of fortune be! a reverse, that not only robs her of these external comforts, and plunges her into all the miseries of want, but also murther's her peace of mind, and entails upon her the curse of eternal infamy! — Of all professions I pronounced that of a courtezan the most deplorable, and her of all courtezans the most unhappy. - She allowed my observation to be just in the main, but at the fame time, affirmed, that notwithstanding the disgraces which had fallen to her share, she had not been so unlucky in the condition of a proftitute as many others of the fame community .-- "I have of-" ten seen, (said she) while I strolled about the " streets at midnight, a number of naked wretches " reduced to rags and filth, huddled together like " fwine, in the corner of a dark alley; fome of " whom, but eighteen months before, I had known " the favourites of the town, rolling in affluence, " and glittering in all the pomp of equipage and " drefs." --- And indeed the gradation is eafily conceived; the most fashionable woman of the town is as liable to contagion, as one in a much humbler sphere; she infects her admirers, her situation is publick; fhe is avoided, neglected, unable to support her usual appearance, which however she strives to maintain as long as possible; her credit fails, she is obliged to retrench and become a night-walker, her malady gains ground, she tampers with her constitution, and ruins it; her complexion fades, she grows nauseous to every body, finds herself reduced to a starving condition, is tempted to pick pockets, is detected, committed to Newgate, where she remains in a miserable condition, 'till she is discharged because the plaintiff will not appear to profecute her. No body will afford her lodging, the fymptoms of her distemper are grown outrageous, she sues to be admitted into an hospital, where she is cured at the expence

d

1-

a

of

15

1-

m

ot

to

S,

ut

er

he

er

of-

of

ch

X-

w

of

fe.

STORE

pence of her nose; she is turned out naked into the streets, depends upon the addresses of the canaille, is fain to allay the rage of hunger and cold with gin, degenerates into a brutal infensibility, rots and dies upon a dung-hill.—Miserable wretch that I am! perhaps the fame horrors are decreed for me!-"No (cried she after some pause) I shall never live " to fuch extremity of diffress! my own hand shall open a way for my deliverance, before I arrive at " that forlorn period!" - Her condition filled me with sympathy and compassion; I revered her qualifications, looked upon her as unfortunate, not criminal; and attended her with fuch care and fuccess, that in less than two months, her health, as well as my own, was perfectly re-established. - As we often conferred upon our mutual affairs, and interchanged advice, a thousand different projects were formed, which upon further canvaffing appeared impracticable. --- We would have gladly gone to fervice; but who would take us in without recommendation? At length an expedient occurred to her, of which she intended to lay hold; and this was, to procure with the first money she should earn, the homely garb of a country wench, go to fome village at a good distance from town, and come up in a waggon, as a fresh girl for fervice; by which means, the might be provided for in a manner much more fuitable to her inclination, than her present way of life.

ententes de la company de la c

structed and matter of the later than a structure of the state of the of the s

ON THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF

-dentity and any contracting another tracting of supplier and the property of

CHAP.

h:

ar

fu

pı

I

M

fa

fcl

CHAP. XXIV.

I am reduced to great misery—assaulted on Towerbill by a press-gang, who put me on board a tender --- my usage there --- my arrival on board of the Thunder man of war, where I am put in irons, and afterwards released by the good offices of Mr. Thomson, who recommends me as assistant to the surgeon --- he relates his own story, and makes me acquainted with the characters of the captain, surgeon, and first mate.

d

0

h

d

ft

1-

ce

rl

ed

Applauded the resolution of Miss Williams, who a few days after, was hired in quality of barkeeper, by one of the ladies who had witnessed in her behalf at the Marshalsea; and who since that time had got credit with a wine merchant, whose favourite she was, to set up a convenient house of her own.—Thither my fellow lodger repaired, after having taken leave of me, with a torrent of tears, and a thousand protestations of eternal gratitude; affuring me, she would remain in this situation no longer than she should pick up money sufficient to put her other design in execution.

As for my own part, I saw no resource but the army or navy, between which I hesitated so long, that I found myself reduced to a starving condition.— My spirit began to accommodate itself to my beggarly fate, and I became so mean, as to go down towards Wapping, with an intention to enquire for an old school-fellow of mine, (who I understood) had got the command of a small coasting vessel, then in the

river, and implore his affiftance. --- But my deftiny prevented this abject piece of behaviour; for as I croffed Tower-wharf, a fquat tawny fellow with a hanger by his fide, and a cudgel in his hand, came up to me, calling, "Yo, ho! brother, you must " come along with me." --- As I did not like his appearance, instead of answering his falutation, I quickened my pace in hopes of ridding myfelf of his company; upon which he whiftled aloud, and immediately another failor appeared before me, who laid hold of me by the collar and began to drag me along. --- Not being of a humour to relish such treatment, I disengaged myself of the assailant, and with one blow of my cudgel, laid him motionless on the ground: and perceiving myself surrounded in a trice. by ten or a dozen more, exerted myself with such dexterity and fuccess, that some of my opponents were fain to attack me with drawn cutlaffes; and after an obstinate engagement, in which I received a large wound on my head, and another on my left cheek, I was disarmed, taken prisoner, and carried on board a preffing tender; where, after being pinioned like a malefactor, I was thrust down into the hold, among a parcel of miserable wretches, the fight of whom well nigh distracted me .-- As the commanding officer had not humanity enough to order my wounds to be dreffed, and I could not use my own hands, I defired one of my fellow-captives who was unfettered, to take a handkerchief out of my pocket and tie it round my head to stop the bleeding. He pulled out my handkerchief ('tis true) but instead of applying it to the use for which I designed it, went to the grating of the hatch-way, and with aftonishing composure, fold it before my face to a bum-boatwoman * then on board for a quart of gin, with

n

fv

dr

be

I

W

na

to

he

kn

66

"

66

...

. ...

..

"

"

ec f

ee 1

tha

Work

^{*} A bum-boat-woman, is one who fells bread, cheefe, greens, liquor, and fresh provision to the failors, in a small boat that lies along-side of the ship.

which he treated his companions, regardless of my circumstances and intreaties.

I complained bitterly of this robbery, to the midshipman on deck, telling him at the same time, that unless my hurts were dressed, I should bleed to death. But compassion was a weakness of which no man could justly accuse this person, who squirting a mouthful of diffolved tobacco upon me through the gratings, told me, "I was a mutinous dog, " and that I might die and be damned." --- Finding there was no other remedy, I appealed to patience, and laid up this usage in my memory, to be recalled at a fitter feafon .-- In the mean time, loss of blood, vexation and want of food, contributed, with the noisome stench of the place, to throw me into a fwoon; out of which I was recovered by a tweak of the nofe, administred by the tar who stood centinel over us, who at the fame time regaled me with a draught of flip, and comforted me with the hopes of being put on board of the Thunder next day, where I should be freed from handcuffs, and cured of my wounds by the doctor. --- I no fooner heard him name the Thunder, than I asked, if he had belonged to that ship long; and he giving me to understand, he had belonged to her five years. I enquired if he knew lieutenant Bowling? --- "Know lieutenant "Bowling (faid he) --- odds my life! and that I " do; and a good feaman he is, as ever flept upon " forecastle, - - and a brave fellow as eyer crackt bisket; --- none of your guinea pigs, --- nor your " fresh water, wishy washy, fair-weather fowls. " -- Many a taught gale of wind has honest Tom "Bowling and I weathered together. --- Here's " his health with all my heart, where-ever he is, " a-loft or alow --- in heaven or in hell --- all's one " for that --- he needs not be ashamed to shew him-" felf."-- I was fo much affected with this elogium, that I could not refrain from telling him, I was lieutenant

d

-

e

e

rfe

es

y

g.

nt

ng it-

th

fe.

2

ch

lieutenant Bowling's kinfman; at which he expressed an inclination to ferve me, and when he was relieved, brought some cold boiled beef in a platter, and biscuit, on which we supped plentifully, and afterwards drank another can of flip together. While we were thus engaged, he recounted a great many exploits of my uncle, who (I found) was very much beloved by the ship's company, and pitied for the misfortune that happened to him in Hispaniola, which I was very glad to be informed was not fo great as I imagined; for captain Oakum had recovered of his wounds, and actually at that time commanded the ship. Having by accident, in my pocket my uncle's letter written from Port Louis, I gave it my benefactor (whose name was Jack Rattlin) for his perufal; but honest Jack told me frankly, he could not read, and defired to know the contents, which I immediately communicated: When he heard that part of it, in which, he fays, he had wrote to his landlord, in Deal; he cried, "Body o' me! "that was old "Ben Block, --- he was dead before the letter came to hand. - Ey, ey, had Ben. been alive, lieutenant Bowling would have had no occasion to " sculk so long. ----- Honest Ben. was the first " man that taught him to hand, reef and steer .---"Well, well, we must all die, that's certain; --" we must all come to port sooner or later,--- at sea or on shore; --- we must be fast moored one day, -- death's like the best bower anchor, as the saying is, it will bring us all up."--- I could not but fignify my approbation of the justness of Jack's reflections; and enquired into the occasion of the quarrel between captain Oakhum and my uncle, which he explained in this manner. ---- Captain "Oakhum, to be fure, is a good man enough, ---66 befides, he's my commander; --- but what's that to me? --- I do my duty, and value no man's anger of a rope's end. --- Now the report goes, as how

66

66

e

I

is

e-

u-

ot

n-

art

rd,

old

me

eu-

to

irst

· fea

day,

fay-

but

re-

the

icle,

tain

1, ---

that

nan's

s, as

how

how he's a lord's, or baron knight's brother, "whereby (d'ye see me) he carries a strait arm, and keeps aloof from his officers, thof, may hap, " they may be as good men in the main as he. Now " we lying at anchor in Tuberoon bay, lieutenant "Bowling had the middle watch, and as he always kept a good look-out, he made (d'ye fee) " three lights in the offing, whereby he ran down to the great cabin for orders, and found the captain " afleep; - whereupon he waked him, which put " him in a main high paffion, and he fwore woundily at the lieutenant, and called him loufy Scotch fon of " a whore, (for I being hen centinel in the steerage, " heard all) and fwab and lubber, whereby the " lieutenant returned the falute, and they jawed " together fore and aft a good spell, till at last the " captain turned out, and laying hold of a rattan, " came athwart Mr. Bowling's quarter; whereby "he told the captain, that if he was not his com-" mander, he would heave him over board, and demanded fatisfaction a-shore; whereby in the " morning watch, the captain went a-shore in the of pinnace, and afterwards the lieutenant carried the " cutter a-shore; and so they, leaving the boats " crews on their oars, went away together; and fo " (d'ye see) in less than a quarter of an hour we " heard firing, whereby we made for the place, and " found the captain lying wounded on the beach, " and fo brought him on board to the doctor, who " cured him in less than fix weeks. But the lieu-" tenant clapt on all the fail he could bear, and had " got far enough a-head before we knew any thing " of the matter; fo that we could never after get " fight of him, for which we were not forry, be-" cause the captain was mainly wroth, and would " certainly have done him a mischief; --- for he af-" terwards caused him to be run on the ships books, VOL. I. wherewhereby he loft all his pay, and if he should be

" taken, would be tried as a deferter."

This account of the captain's behaviour gave me no advantageous idea of his character; and I could not help lamenting my own fate, that had fubjected me to fuch a commander. However, making a virtue of necessity, I put a good face on the matter, and next day was with the other pressed men put on board of the Thunder lying at the Nore. --- When we came along fide, the mate who guarded us thither, ordered my handcuffs to be taken off, that I might get on board the easier; this being perceived by some of the company who stood upon the gangboards to fee us enter, one of them called to Jack Rattlin, who was busied in doing this friendly office for me; "Hey, Jack, what Newgate galley " have you boarded in the river as you came along? " Have we not thieves enow among us already?" Another observing my wounds, which remained exposed to the air, told me, my seams were uncaulked, and that I must be new payed. --- A third, seeing my hair clotted together with blood, as it were, into distinct cords, took notice, that my bows were manned with the red ropes, instead of my side. ---A fourth asked me, if I could not keep my yards square without iron braces? And in short, a thoufand witticisms of the same nature, were passed upon me, before I could get up the ship's side. --- After we had been all entered upon the ship's books, I enquired of one of my ship-mates wherethe surgeon was, that I might have my wounds dreffed, and had actually got as far as the middle deck (for our ship carried eighty guns) in my way to the cock-pit, when I was me by the same midshipman, who had used me so barbaroufly in the tender: He feeing me free from my chains, asked, with an insolent air, who had releafed me? To this I foolishly answered with a countenance that too plainly declared the state of my thoughts; thoughts; "Whoever did it, I am persuaded did "not consult you in the affair." --- I had no sooner uttered these words, than he cried, "Damn you, " you faucy fon of a bitch, I'll teach you to talk fo to " your officer." --- So faying he bestowed on me several severe stripes, with a supple Jack he had in his hand; and going to the commanding officer, made fuch a report of me, that I was immediately put in irons by the mafter at arms, and a centinel placed over me. --- Honest Rattlin, as soon as he heard of my condition, came to me, and administred all the confolation he could, and then went to the furgeon in my behalf, who fent one of his mates to dress my wounds. This mate was no other than my old friend Thomson, with whom I became acquainted at the Navy-office, as before mentioned. If I knew him at first fight, it was not easy for him to recognize me, disfigured with blood and dirt, and altered by the mifery I had undergone .-- Unknown as I was to him, he surveyed me with looks of compassion, and handled my fores with great tenderness. When he had applied what he thought proper, and was about to leave me, I asked him if my misfortunes had difguifed me fo much, that he could not recollect my face? Upon this he observed me with great earnestness for some time, and at length, protefted he could not recollect one feature of my countenance.--- To keep him no longer in suspence, I told him my name; which when he heard, he embraced me with affection, and professed his forrow in seeing me in fuch a difagreeable fituation. I made him acquainted with my story, and when he heard how inhumanly I had been used in the tender, he left me abruptly, affuring me, I should see him again soon, I had scarce time to wonder at his sudden departure. when the mafter at arms came to the place of my confinement, and bid me follow him to the quarterdeck, where I was examined by the first lieutenant, K 2 Who

e

ls

1-

n

er

n-

15,

u-

ed

vas

ar-

my

re-

ite-

my

its;

who commanded the ship in the absence of the captain, touching the treatment I had received in the tender from my friend the midshipman, who was present to confront me. --- I recounted the particulars of his behaviour to me, not only in the tender, but fince my being on board the ship, part of which being proved by the evidence of Jack Rattlin and others, who had no great devotion for my oppreffor, I was discharged from confinement to make way for him, who was delivered to the master at arms to take his turn in the bilboes. --- And this was not the only fatisfaction I enjoyed, for I was, at the request of the surgeon, exempted from all other duty, than that of affifting his mates in making and administring medicines to the fick. --- This good office I owed to the friendship of Mr. Thomson, who had represented me in such a favourable light to the surgeon, that he demanded me of the lieutenant to supply the place of his third mate, who was lately dead. - When I had obtained this favour, my friend Thomson carried me down to the cock-pit, which is the place allotted for the habitation of the furgeons mates: And when he had shewn me their birth, (as he called it) I was filled with aftonishment and horror. --- We descended by divers ladders to a space as dark as a dungeon, which I understood was immersed feveral feet under water, being immediately above the hold: I had no sooner approached this dismal gulph, than my nose was faluted with an intolerable ftench of putrified cheese and rancid butter, that issued from an apartment at the foot of the ladder, refembling a chandler's shop, where, by the faint glimmering of a candle, I could perceive a man with a pale meagre countenance, fitting behind a kind of desk, having spectacles on his nose, and a pen in his hand -- This (I learned of Mr. Thomson) was the fhip's steward, who sat there to distribute provision to the feveral messes, and to mark what each received. - He

T

ly

be

or

he

fo

liv

-- He therefore presented my name to him, and defired I might be entered his mess; then taking a light in his hand, conducted me to the place of his refidence, which was a fquare of about fix feet, furrounded with the medicine cheft, that of the first mate, his own, and a board by way of table fastened to the after-powder-room; it was also inclosed with canvas nailed round to the beams of the Thip, to screen us from the cold, as well as from the view of the midshipmen and quarter-masters, who lodged within the cable tiers on each fide of us: In this gloomy mansion, he entertained me with some cold falt pork, which he brought from a fort of locker, fixed above the table; and calling for the boy of the mess, sent him for a can of beer, of which he made excellent flip to crown the banquet. ---- By this time I began to recover my spirits, which had been exceedingly depressed with the appearance of every thing about me, and could no longer refrain from asking the particulars of Mr. Thomson's fortune, since I had feen him in London --- He told me, that being disappointed in his expectations of borrowing money to gratify the rapacious f-t-ry at the Navy-office, he found himself utterly unable to subsist any longer in town, and had actually offered his fervice in quality of mate, to the furgeon of a merchant's ship bound to Guinea on the flaving trade; when one morning, a young fellow, of whom he had some acquaintance. came to his lodgings, and informed him, that he had feen a warrant made out in his name at the Navyoffice, for furgeon's fecond mate of a third rate: This unexpected plece of good news he could fcarcely believe to be true; more especially, as he had been found qualified at Surgeon's-hall for third mate only; but that he might not be wanting to himfelf, he went thither to be affured, and actually found it fo: Whereupon, demanding his warrant, it was delivered to him, and the oaths administred i amedi-K 3 diately.

e

ıl

e

d

a

of

is

he

on

ed.

He

diately. --- That very afternoon, he went to Gravesend in the tilt-boat, from whence he took a place in the tide-coach for Rochester; next morning goton board the Thunder, for which he was appointed. then lying in the harbour at Chatham; and the fame day was mustered by the clerk of the checque. ---And well it was for him, that fuch expedition was used; for in less than twelve hours after his arrival, another William Thomson came on board, affirming that he was the person for whom the warrant was expedited, and that the other was an impostor .--- My friend was grievously alarmed at this accident, the more so, as his namesake had very much the advantage over him, both in affurance and dress. --- How. ever, to acquit himself of the suspicion of imposture, he produced several letters written from Scotland to him in that name, and recollecting that his indentures were in a box on board, he brought them up, and convinced all present, that he had not assumed a name which did not belong to him. --- His competitor enraged, that they should hesitate in doing him juffice, (for to be fure, the warrant had been designed for him) behaved with fo much indecent heat, that the commanding officer, (who was the fame gentleman I had feen) and the furgeon, were offended at his prefumption, and making a point of it with their friends in town, in less than a week got the first confirmed in his station. -- "I have been on board " (faid he) ever fince, and as this way of life is be-" come familiar to me, have no cause to complain " of my fituation. --- The furgeon is a good-natured "indolent man; the first mate (who is now on " (hore on duty) is indeed a little proud and chole-" rick, as all Welchmen are, but in the main, a " friendly honest fellow. --- The lieutenants I have " no concern with; and as for the captain, he is " too much of a gentleman to know a furgeon's " mate, even by fight." CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

The behaviour of Mr. Morgan — his pride, displeasure and generosity --- the acconomy of our mess described — Thomson's further friendship --- the nature of my duty explained — the situation of the sick.

THILE he was thus discoursing to me, we heard a voice on the cock-pit ladder, pronounce with great vehemence, in a strange dialect, "The devil and his dam blow me from the top of " Mounchdenny, if I go to to him before there is " fomething in my belly; --- let his nose be as yel-" low as faffron, or as plue as a pell (look you) or " green as a leek, 'tis all one." --- To this somebody answered, "So it seems my poor mess-mate must part his cable for want of a little affistance. -- His " fore-top-fail is loose already; and besides the doc-" tor ordered you to over-haul him; --- But I fee " you don't mind what your master says,"-Here he was interrupted with, "Splutter and oons! you " loufy tog, who do you call my master? get you " gone to the doctor, and tell him my birth, and " education, and my abilities; and moreover, my " behaviour is as good as his, or any gentleman's " (no disparagement to him) in the whole world-"Got pless my foul! does he think, or conceive, or " imagine, that I am a horse, or an als, or a goat, " to trudge backwards and forewards, and upwards " and downwards, and by fea, and by land, at his " will and pleasures? - Go your ways, you rap-" fcallion, and tell doctor Atkins, that I defire and " request, that he will give a look upon the tying K 4 man,

n

n

2-

2

is

i's

P.

" man, and order fomething for him if he be dead or alive, and I will fee him take it by and by, " when my craving fromach is fatisfied, look you." -At this the other went away, faying, that if they would ferve him fo, when he was a dying, by God, he would be foul of them in the other world.—Here Mr. Thomson let me know that the person we heard was Mr. Morgan the first mate, who was just come on board from the hospital, whither he had attended fome of the fick in the morning. - At the fame time I faw him come into the birth.-He was a short thick man with a face garnished with pimples, a fnub nose turned up at the end, an excessive wide mouth, and little fiery eyes, furrounded with skin puckered up in innumerable wrinkles. - My friend immediately made him acquainted with my case; when he regarded me with a very lofty look, but without speaking, set down a bundle he had in his hand, and approached the cupboard, which when he had opened, he exclaimed in a great paffion, "Cot is my life! all the pork is gone, as I am a christian!" Thomson then gave him to underfland, that as I had been brought on board half famished, he could do no less than entertain me with what was in the locker; and the rather as he had bid the fleward enter me in the mess. - Whether this disappointment made Mr. Morgan more peevish than usual, or he really thought himself too little regarded by his fellow-mate, I know not, but after fome pause, he went on in this manner. - "Mr. Thomson, perhaps you do not use me with all the good manners, and complaifance, and respect, (look you) that becomes you, because you have not vouchfafed to advise with me in this affair. " - I have, in my time, (look you) been a man of " fome weight and substance, and consideration, " and have kept house and home, and paid scot and lot and the king's taxes; ay, and maintained a fa-" mily

es mily to boot. - And moreover, also, I am your " fenior, and your elder, and your petter, Mr. Thomson."-My elder I'll allow you to be, but not my better, (cried Thomson with some heat.)" Cot is my faviour, and witness too (faid Morgan, with great vehemence) that I am more elder, and therefore more petter by many years than you." -Fearing this dispute might be attended with some bad consequence, I interposed and told Mr. Morgan, I was very forry for having been the occasion of any difference between him and the fecond mate; and that rather than cause the least breach in their good understanding, I would eat my allowance by myself, or feek admission into some other company. -But Thomson, with more spirit than discretion (as I thought) infifted upon my remaining where he had appointed me; and observed that no man possesfed of generofity and compaffion, would have any objection to it, confidering my birth and talents, and the misfortunes I had of late fo unjustly undergone. - This was touching Mr. Morgan on the right key, who protested with great earnestness, that he had no objection to my being received in the mess; but only complained, that the ceremony of asking his confent was not observed. " As for a shentle-" man in diffres, (said he shaking me by the hand) " I lofe him as I lofe my own powels: For Got " help me! I have had vexations enough upon my " own pack." - And as I afterwards learned, in fo faying, he spoke no more than what was true; for he had been once fettled in a very good situation in Glamorganshire, and was ruined by being security for an acquaintance. - All differences being composed, he untied his bundle, which confifted of three bunches of onions, and a great lump of cheshirechaese wrapt up in a handkerchief; and taking some biscuit from the capboard, fell to with a keen appetite, inviting us to a share of the repast. - When he K 5 had

had fed heartily on his homely fare, he filled a large cup made of a cocoa-nut shell, with brandy, and drinking it off, told us, " Prandy was the pest " menstruum for onion and sheese." - His hunger being appealed, he began to be in better humour; and being inquisitive about my birth, no sooner understood that I was descended of a good family, than he discovered a particular good will to me on that account, deducing his own pedigree in a direct line from the famous Caractacus king of the Britons, who was first the prisoner, and afterwards the friend of Claudius Cæsar. — Perceiving how much I was reduced in point of linen, he made me a prefent of two good ruffled shirts, which with two more of check which I received from Mr. Thomson, enabled me to appear with decency. - Mean while the failor, whom Mr. Morgan had fent to the doctor, brought a prescription for his mess-mate, which when the Welchman had read, he got up to prepare it, and asked, if the man was "Tead or alive." " Dead! (replied Jack) if he was dead, he would " have no occasion for 'doctor's stuff.-No, thank God, death hasn't as yet boarded him, but they have " been yard arm and yard arm these three glasses." - " Are his eyes open? (continued the mate.)" ---" His starboard eye (faid the failor) is open, but fast " jamm'd in his head; and the haulyards of his un-" der-jaw are given way." - " Passion of my " heart ! (cried Morgan) the man is as pad as one " would defire to be! - Did you feel his pulses?" To this the other replied with "Anan?" - Upon which this Cambro Briton, with great earnestness and humanity, ordered the tar to run to his mess-mate, and keep him alive till he should come with the medicine, " and then (faid he) you shall peradventure, " pehold what you shall see." --- The poor fellow with great simplicity ran to the place where the fick man lay, but in less than a minute returned with a woful

woful countenance, and told us his comrade had struck. Morgan hearing this, exclaimed, "Mercy upon my salvation! why did you not stop him till Is came?"—"Stop him (said the other) I hail'd him several times, but he was too far on his way, and the enemy had got possession of his close quarters; fo that he did not mind me."—"Well, well, (said he) we all owe heaven a Teath.—Go your ways, you ragamussion, and take an example and a warning, look you, and repent of your misseets."—So saying, he pushed the seaman out of the birth.

While he entertained us with reflections fuitable to this event, we heard the boatswain pipe to dinner ; and immediately the boy belonging to our mess, ran to the locker, from whence he carried off a large wooden platter, and in a few minutes, returned with it full of boiled peafe, crying, "Scaldings," all the way as . he came .-- The cloath, confifting of a piece of an old fail, was inflantly laid, covered with three plates, which by the colour I could with difficulty difcern tobe metal, and as many spoons of the same composition, two of which were curtailed in the handles. and the other abridged in the lip. Mr. Morgan himfelf enriched this mess with a lump of salt butter, scooped from an old gallipot, and a handful of onions fhorn, with some pounded pepper .-- I was not very much tempted with the appearance of this dish, of which, nevertheless, my mess-mates eat heartily, adviling me to follow their example, and it was banyan day, and we could have no meat till next noon ---But I had already laid in sufficient for the occasion; and therefore defired to be excused; expressing a curiofity to know the meaning of banyan-day---They told me, that on Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays the ship's company had no allowance of meat, and that these meagre days were called banyan days, the reason of which they did not know; but I have since learned they take their denomination from a feet of devotees

devotees in some parts of the East Indies, who never taste slesh.

After dinner, Thomson led me round the ship, shewed me the different parts, described their uses, and as far as he could, made me acquainted with the particulars of the discipline and economy practifed on board .-- He then demanded of the boatfwain, an hammock for me, which was flung in a very neat manner by my friend Jack Rattlin; and as I had no bed-cloaths, procured credit for me with the purfer. for a mattrass and two blankets .--- At seven o'clock in the evening Morgan vifited the fick, and having ordered what was proper for each, I affifted Thomfon in making up his prescriptions: But when I followed him with the medicines into the fick birth or hospital, and observed the situation of the patients, I was much less surprized that people should die on board, than that any fick person should recover. Here I faw about fifty miferable diffempered wretches. fuspended in rows, so huddled one upon another, that not more than fourteen inches space was allotted for each with his bed and bedding; and deprived of the light of the day, as well as of fresh air; breathing nothing but a noisome atmosphere of the morbid steams exhaling from their own excrements and difeafed bodies, devoured with vermin hatched in the filth that furrounded them, and destitute of every convenience necessary for people in that helpless condition.

C H A P. XXVI.

A disagreeable accident bappens to me in the discharge of my office—Morgan's nose is offended—a dialogue between him and the ship's steward—upon examination, I find more causes of complaint than one—my bair is cut off—Morgan's cookery—the manner of sleeping on board—I am waked in the night by a dreadful noise.

Could not comprehend how it was possible for the attendants to come near those who hung on the infide towards the fides of the ship, in order to affift them, as they feemed barricadoed by those who lay on the outfide, and entirely out of the reach of all vifitation---Much less could I conceive how my friend Thomson would be able to administer clysters, that were ordered for some in that situation; when I saw him thrust his wig in his pocket, and stript himself to his waiftcoat in a moment, then creep on all four. under the hammocks of the fick, and forcing up his bare pate between two, keep them afunder with one shoulder, until he had done his duty .-- Eager to learn the service, I defired he would give me leave to perform the next operation of that kind; and he confenting, I undressed myself after his example, and crawling along, the ship happened to roll; this alarming me, I laid hold of the first thing that came within my grasp, with such violence, that I overturned it. and foon found by the smell that issued upon me, I had not unlocked a box of the most delicious perfume; it was well for me that my nofe was none of the most delicate, else I know not how I might have been affected fected by this vapour, which diffused itself all over the ship to the utter discomposure of every body who. tarried on the fame deck ;---neither was the confequence of this difgrace confined to my fense of smelling only; for I felt my misfortune more ways than one. That I might not, however, appear altogether disconcerted in this my coup d' essai, I got up, and pushing my head with great force between two hammocks, towards the middle, where the greatest refistance was, I made an opening indeed, but not understanding the knack of dexterously turning my shoulder to maintain my advantage, had the mortification to find myself stuck up as it were in a pillory, and the weight of three or four people bearing on each fide of my neck; fo that I was in danger of strangulation .-- While I remained in this defenceless posture, one of the fick men, rendered peevish by hisdistemper, was so enraged at the smell I had occafioned, and the rude shock he had received from me in my elevation, that with many bitter reproaches, he feized me by the nofe, which he tweaked fo unmercifully that I roared with anguish. Thomson: perceiving my condition, ordered one of the waiters to my affiftance, who with much difficulty difengaged me from this embaras, and hindered me from taking vengeance on the fick man, whose indisposition would not have screened him from the effects of my indignation.

After having made an end of our ministry for that time, we descended to the cockpit, my friend comforting me for what had happened, with a homely proverb, which I do not chuse to repeat.—When we had got half way down the ladder, Mr. Morgan, before he saw us, having intelligence by his nose, of the approach of something extraordinary, cried, "Cot have mercy upon my senses! I believe the enemy has poarded us in a stink-pot!" Then directing his discourse to the steward, from whom he imagined

the odour proceeded, he reprimanded him feverely for the freedoms he took among gentlemen of birth. and threatened to smoak him like a padger with fulphur, if he ever should presume to offend his neighbours with fuch smells, for the future: The steward, conscious of this own innocence, replied with some warmth, "I know of no fmells but those of your " own making."---This repartee introduced a fmart dialogue, in which the Welchman undertook to prove that though the stench he complained of, did not flow from the steward's own body, he was nevertheless the author of it, by ferving out damaged provisions to the ship's company; and in particular, putrified cheese, from the use of which only, he affirmed, such unfavory fleams could arife. -- Then he launched out into the praise of good cheese, of which he gave the analysis; explained the different kinds of that commodity, with the methods practifed to make and preferve it; and concluded with observing, that in yielding good cheefe, the county of Glamorgan might vie with Cheshire itself, and was much superior to it in the produce of goats and putter .-- I gathered from this conversation, that if I entered in my present pickle, I should be no welcome guest, and therefore defired Mr. Thomson to go before, and represent my calamity; at which the first mate expressing some concern, went upon deck immediately, taking his way through the cable tire, and by the main hatchway, to avoid encountering me; defiring me to clean myself as soon as possible; for he intended to regale himself with a dish of salmagundy and a pipe .--- Accordingly, I fet about this disagreeable business, and foon found I had more causes of complaint than I at first imagined; for I perceived some guests had honoured me with their company, whose visit I did not at all think feafonable; neither did they feem inclined to leave me in a hurrry, being in possession of my chief quarters, where they fed without referve at

the expence of my blood .-- But confidering it would be much easier to extirpate this ferocious colony in the infancy of their fettlement, than after they should be multiplied and naturalized to the foil, I took the advice of my friend, who, to prevent fuch misfortunes, went always close shaved, and made the boy of our mess cut off my hair, which had been growing fince I left the fervice of Lavement; and the fecond mate lent me an old bob wig to fupply the loss of that covering. This affair being ended, and every thing adjusted in the best manner my circumstances would permit, the descendant of Caractacus returned, and ordering the boy to bring a piece of falt beef from the brine, cut off a flice and mixed it with an equal quantity of onions, which feafoning with a moderate proportion of pepper and falt, he brought it into a confistence with oil and vinegar, -- Then tasting the dish, affured us, it was the best salmagundy that ever he made, and recommended it to our palate with fuch heartiness, that I could not help doing honour to his preparation. But I had no fooner fwallowed a mouthful, than I thought my entrails were scorched, and endeavoured with a deluge of small beer, to allay the heat it occasioned .--- Supper being over, Mr. Morgan having smoaked a couple of pipes, and supplied the moisture he had expended with as many cans of flip, of which we all partook, a certain yawning began to admonish me, that it was high time to repair by fleep the injury I had fuffered from want of rest the preceding night; which being perceived by my companions, whose time of repose was now arrived, they proposed we should turn in, or in other words, go to bed. Our hammocks, which hung paralell to one another, on the outlide of the birth, were immediately unlashed, and I beheld my messmates spring with great agility into their respective nests, where they seemed to lie concealed, very much at their eafe .-- But it was fome time before I could prevail

prevail upon myfelf to trust my carcase at such a diftance from the ground, in a narrow bag, out of which, I imagined, I should be apt, on the least motion in my fleep, to tumble down at the hazard of breaking my bones. I fuffered myself, however, to be perfuaded, and taking a leap to get in, threw myfelf quite over, with such violence, that had I not luckily got hold of Thomson's hammock, I should have pitched upon my head on the other fide, and in all likelihood fractured my skull .-- After some fruitless efforts, I succeeded at last; but the apprehension of the jeopardy in which I believed myfelf, withstood all the attacks of sleep, till towards the morning-watch, when, in spite of my fears, I was overpowered with flumber: though I did not long enjoy this comfortable fituation; being aroufed with a noise fo loud and shrill, that I thought the drums of my ears were burst by it; this was followed by a dreadful fummons pronounced by a hoarfe voice, which I could not understand. While I was debating with myself whether or not I should wake my companion, and enquire into the occasion of this disturbance, I was informed by one of the quarter-masters, who passed by me with a lanthorn in his hand, that the noise which alarmed me, was occasioned by the boatfwain's mates who called up the larboard watch, and that I must lay my account with such interruption every morning at the fame hour .-- Being now more affured of my fafety, I addressed myself again to rest, and flept till eight o-clock, when getting up, and breakfasting with my comrades, on biscuit and brandy, the fick were vifited and affifted as before: after which my good friend. Thomson explained and performed another piece of duty, to which I was a ffranger .-- At a certain hour in the morning, the boy of the mess went round all the decks, ringing a fmall hand-bell, and in rhimes composed for the occasion, invited all those who had fores to repair before fore the mast, where one of the doctor's mates attended,, with applications to dress them.

รายเกี่ยงเกี่ยงในสิ้นสืบสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบสิ้นสืบ

C H A P. XXVII.

I acquire the friendship of the surgeon, who procures a warrant for me, and makes me a present of cloaths—a battle between a midshipman and me—the surgeon leaves the ship—the captain comes on board with another surgeon—a dialogue between the captain and Morgan—the sick are ordered to be brought upon the quarter-deck and examined—the consequences of that order—a madman accuses Morgan, and is set a liberty by command of the captain, whom he instantly attacks and pummels without mercy.

THILE I was busied with my friend in this practice, the doctor chanced to pass by the place where we were, and stooping to observe me, appeared very well fatisfied with my method of application; and afterwards fent for me to his cabbin, where, having examined me touching my skill in furgery, and the particulars of my fortune, he interested himself so far in my behalf, as to promise his affiftance in procuring a warrant for me, feeing I had been already found qualified at Surgeon's Hall, for the station I filled on board; and in this he the more cordially engaged, when he understood I was nephew to Lieutenant Bowling, for whom he expressed a particular regard .-- In the mean time, I could learn from his discourse, that he did not intend to go to sea again with Captain Oakhum, having, as he he thought, been indifferently used by him during the

last voyage.

While I lived tolerably eafy, in expectation of preferment, I was not altogether without mortifications, which I not only suffered from the rude insults of the failors, and petty officers, among whom I was known by the name of Loblolly Boy; but also from the disposition of Morgan, who, though friendly in the main, was often very troublesome with his pride, which expected a good deal of submission from me, and delighted in recapitulating the favours I had received at his hands.

About fix weeks after my arrival on board, the furgeon bidding me follow him into his cabbin, prefented a warrant to me, by which I was appointed furgeon's third mate on board the Thunder .-- This he had procured by his interest at the Navy-office; as also another for himself, by virtue of which he was removed into a fecond rate. I acknowledged his kindness in the strongest terms my gratitude could fuggest, and professed my forrow at the prospect of lofing fuch a valuable friend, to whom I hoped to have recommended myself still further, by my respectful and diligent behaviour .--- But his generosity rested not here ;--- for, before he left the ship, he made me a present of a chest and some cloaths, that enabled me to support the rank to which he had raised me .-- I found my spirit revive with my good fortune; and now I was an officer, refolved to maintain the dignity of my station, against all opposition or affronts; nor was it long before I had occasion to exert my refolution; my old enemy the midshipman (whose name was Crampley) entertaining an implacable animolity against me, for the disgrace he had fuffered on my account, had fince that time taken all opportunities of reviling and ridiculing me, when I was not intitled to retort this bad usage.--And even after I had been rated on the books, and mustered as furgeon's

n

f

furgeon's mate, did not think fit to restrain his infolence.--In particular, being one day prefent, while I dreffed a wound in a failor's leg, he began to fing a fong, which I thought highly injurious to the honour of my country, and therefore fignified my refentment, by observing, that the Scots always laid their account with finding enemies among the ignorant, infignificant and malicious .-- This unexpected piece of affurance entaged him to fuch a degree, that he lent me a blow on the face, which I verily thought had demolished my cheek-bone; I was not flow in returning the obligation, and the affair began to be very ferious, when by accident Mr. Morgan, and one of the mafter's mates, coming that way, interpoled, and inquiring into the cause, endeavoured to promote a reconciliation; but finding us both exasperated to the uttermost, and bent against accommodation, they advised us, either to leave our difference undecided till we should have an opportunity of terminating it on fhore, like gentlemen, or elfe choose a proper place on board, and bring it to an iffue by boxing. This last expedient was greedily embraced by us both; and being forthwith conducted to the ground proposed, we stript in a moment, and began a very furious contest, in which I soon found myself inferior to my antagonist, not so much in strength and agility, as in skill, which he had acquired in the school of Hockley in the Hole and Tottenham-Court .-- Many crossbuttocks did I fustain, and pegs on the stomach without number, till at last, my breath being quite gone, as well as my vigour wasted, I grew desperate, and collecting all my strength in one effort, threw in at once head, hands, and feet with fuch violence, that I drove my antagonist three paces backward into the main hatchway, down which he fell, and pitching upon his head and right shoulder, remained without fense and motion .--- Morgan looking down, and feeing him lie in that condition, cried, "Upon my conscience,

" conscience, as I am a Christian sinner (look you) I " believe his pattles are all ofer; but I take you all " to witness that there was no treachery in the case, " and that he has suffered by the chance of war."---So faying, he descended to the deck below, to examine into the situation of my adversary; and left me very little pleased with my victory, as I found myself not only terribly bruised, but likewise in danger of being called to account for the death of Crampley: But this fear vanished when my fellow-mate. having by bleeding him in the juglar, brought him to himself, and inquired into the state of his body, called up to me to be under no concern, for the midshipman had received no other damage than as pretty a luxation of the os humeri, as one would defire to fee on a fummer's day .--- Upon this information, I crawled down to the cockpit, and acquainted Thomson with the affair, who, providing himfelf with bandages, &c. necessary for the occasion, went up to affift Mr. Morgan in the reduction of the diflocation. --- When this was fuccessfully performed, they wished me joy of the event of the combat; and the Welchman, after observing, that in all likelihood, the ancient Scots and Britons were the fame people, bid me " Praise Got for putting mettle in my pelly, and " firength in my limbs to support it." --- I acquired fuch reputation by this rencounter (which lasted twenty minutes) that every body became more cautious of his behaviour towards me; though Crampley, with his arm in a fling, talked very high, and threatened to seize the first opportunity of retrieving on shore, the honour he had loft by an accident, from which I could justly claim no merit.

About this time, captain Oakhum, having received failing orders, came on board, and brought along with him a furgeon of his own country, who foon made us fenfible of the loss we suffered in the departure of doctor Atkins; being grossly ignorant, and

intolerably

intolerably assuming, false, vindictive, and unforgiving; a merciless tyrant to his inferiors, an abject fycophant to those above him. In the morning after the captain came on board, our first mate, according to custom, went to wait on him with a sick list, which when this grim commander had perused, he cried with a stern countenance, "Blood and oons! " fixty-one fick people on board of my ship!---Harkee you, fir, I'll have no fick in my ship, by G--d." The Welchman replied, he should be very glad to find no fick people on board; but while it was otherwife, he did no more than his duty in prefenting him with a lift .-- "You and your lift may be d---n'd, " (faid the captain, throwing it at him) I fay, there " shall be no sick in this ship while I have the com-" mand of her."---Mr. Morgan being nettled at this treatment, told him, his indignation ought to be directed to Got Almighty, who visited his people with diffempers, and not to him, who contributed all in his power towards their cure. The bashaw not being used to such behaviour in any of his officers, was enraged to fury at this fatirical infinuation, and ftamping with his foot, called him infolent fcoundrel. threatning to have him pinioned to the deck, if he should presume to utter another syllable. But the blood of Caractacus being thoroughly heated, difdained to be reftricted by fuch a command, and began to manifest itself in, " Captain Oagum, I am a gentleman of birth and parentage (look you) and " peradventure I am moreover---" Here his harangue was broke off by the captain's fleward, who, being Morgan's coutryman, hurried him out of the cabin before he had time to exasperate his master to a greater degree: and this would certainly have been the case; for the indignant Welchman could hardly be hindered by his friend's arguments and intreaties, from re-entering the presence-chamber, and defying Captain Oakhum to his teeth .- He was, however, ap-- peased

r

n

n

ti

fe

to

p

tr

th

2

V

peafed at length, and came down to the birth, where finding Thomson and me at work preparing medicines, he bid us leave off our lapour and go to play, for the captain, by his fole word and power and command, had driven fickness a pegging to the tevil, and there was no more malady on board. So faying, he drank off a gill of brandy, fighed grievously three times, poured forth an ejaculation of "Got pless my " heart, liver and lungs!" and then began to fing a Welch fong with great earnestness of visage, voice and gesture .-- I could not conceive the meaning of this fingular phænomenon, and faw by the looks of Thomson, who at the same time shook his head, that he suspected poor Cadwallader's brains were unfettled. He perceiving our amazement, told us, he would explain the mystery; but at the same time, bid us take notice, that he had lived poy, patchelor, married man and widower, almost forty years, and in all that time, there was no man nor mother's fon in the whole world, who durst use him so ill as Captain Oakhum had done. Then he acquainted us with the dialogue that passed between them, as I have already related it; and had no fooner finished this narration, than he received a message from the furgeon, to bring the fick-lift to the quarter deck, for the captain had ordered all the patients thither to be reviewed .--- This inhuman order shocked us extremely, as we knew it would be impossible to carry fome of them on the deck, without imminent danger of their lives; but as we likewife knew it would be to no purpose for us to remonstrate against it, we repaired to the quarter-deck in a body, to fee this extraordinary muster; Morgan observing by the way, that the captain was going to fend to the other world, a great many evidences to testify against himself .---When we appeared upon deck, the captain bid the doctor, who flood bowing at his right hand, look at these lazy lubberly sons of bitches, who were good for

ha

1

139

, 31

m

DE

181

out

-at

ST.

er

Sit

b

0

ofe

N

D.C

Juin

g

Ofm

900

for nothing on board but to eat the king's provision. and encourage idleness in the skulkers .-- The furgeon grinned approbation, and taking the lift, began to examine the complaints of each as they could crawl to the place appointed .-- The first who came under his cognizance was a poor fellow just freed of a fever, which had weakened him fo much, that he could hardly fland .--- Mr. Mackshane (for that was the doctor's name) having felt his pulse, protested he was as well as any man in the world; and the captain delivered him over to the boatfwain's mate, with orders that he should receive a round dozen at the gang-way immediately, for counterfeiting himself fick :--- but before the discipline could be executed, the man dropt down on the deck, and had well nigh perished under the hands of the executioner .- The next patient to be confidered, laboured under a quartan ague, and being then in his interval of health, discovered no other symptons of distemper, than a pale meagre countenance, and emaciated body; upon which, he was declared fit for duty, and turned over to the boatfwain; --- but being refolved to difgrace the docton died upon the forecastle next day, during his cold fit .-- The third complained of a pleuretic stitch, and spitting of blood, for which doctor Mackshane prescribed exercise at the pump to promote expectoration; but whether this was improper for one in his fituation, or that it was used to excess, I know not, but in less than half an hour he was suffocated with a deluge of blood that iffued from his lungs .---A fourth, with much difficulty, climbed to the quarter-deck, being loaded with a monftrous ascites or dropfy, that invaded his cheft fo much, he could scarce fetch his breath; but his disease being interpreted into fat, occasioned by idleness and excess of eating, he was ordered, with a view to promote perfpiration and enlarge his cheft, to go aloft immediately: It was in vain for this unweildy wretch, to alledge alledge his utter incapacity, the boatfwain's driver was commanded to whip him up with a cat and nine tails: The fmart of this application made him exert himself so much, that he actually arrived at the foothook-shrouds, but when the enormous weight of his body had nothing elfe to support it than his weakened arms, either out of spite or necessity he quitted his hold, and plumped into the fea, where he must have been drowned, had not a failor, who was in a boat along-fide, faved his life, by keeping him affoat, till he was hoisted on board by a tackle.—It would be tedious and disagreeable to describe the fate of every miserable object that suffered by the inhumanity and ignorance of the captain and furgeon, who fo wantonly facrificed the lives of their fellow-creatures. Many were brought up in the height of fevers, and rendered delirious by the injuries they suffered in the way .--- Some gave up the ghost in the presence of their inspectors; and others, who were ordered to their duty, languished a few days at work, among their fellows, and then departed without any ceremony .-- On the whole, the number of fick was reduced to less than a dozen; and the authors of this reduction were applauding themselves for the services they had done to their king and country, when the boatswain's mate informed his honour, that there was a man below lashed to his hammock by the direction of the doctor's mate, and that he begged hard to be released; affirming, he had been so maltreated only for a grudge Mr. Morgan bore to him, and that he was as much in his fenses as any man aboard.-- The captain hearing this, darted a fevere look at the Welchman, and ordered the man to be brought up immediately: Upon which, Morgan protested with great fervency, that the person in question was as mad as a March-hare; and begged for the love of Got, they would at least keep his arms pinioned WOL. L during

is

1,

ne

9-

in

W

ed

r-

or

ıld

er-

of

er-

ie-

to

during his examination, to prevent him from doing mischief .-- This request the commander granted for his own fake, and the patient was produced, who infifted upon his being in his right wits with fuch calmness and strength of argument, that every body prefent was inclined to believe him, except Morgan, who affirmed there was no trufting to appearances; for he himself had been so much imposed upon by his behaviour two days before, that he had actually unbound him with his own hands, and had well nigh been murdered for his pains: this was confirmed by the evidence of one of the waiters, who declared, he had pulled this patient from the doctor's mate, whom he had gotten down and almost strangled .--- To this the man answered, that the witness was a creature of Morgan's, and was suborned to give his testimony against him by the malice of the mate, whom the defendant had affronted, by discovering to the people on board that Mr. Morgan's wife kept a gin-shop in Rag-Fair .--This anecdote produced a laugh at the expence of the Welchman, who shaking his head with some emotion, faid, "Ay, ay, 'tis no matter .-- Got knows, " it is an arrant falshood." --- Captain Oakum, without any further helitation, ordered the fellow to be unfettered; at the fame time, threatning to make Morgan exchange fituations with him for his fpite; but the Briton no fooner heard the decision in favour of the madman, than he got up the mizen-shrouds, crying to Thomson and me to get out of his reach, for we should see him play the devil with a vengeance. We did not think fit to difregard his caution, and accordingly got up on the poop, whence we beheld the maniac (as foon as he was released) fly at the captain like a fury, crying, "I'll let you know, you " fcoundrel, that I am commander of this veffel"--and pummel him without mercy. The furgeon, who went to the affiftance of his patron, fhared the fame

1

1

.

V

h

W

fate; and it was with the utmost difficulty, that he was mastered at last, after having done great execution among those who opposed him.

教育教育教育教育教育教育教育教育教育

C H A P. XXVIII.

The captain enraged, threatens to put the madman to death with his own hand—is diverted from that resolution by the arguments and persuasion of the first lieutenant and surgeon—we set sail for St. Helens, join the fleet under the command of Sir C—n—r O—le, and proceed for the West-Indies—are overtaken by a terrible tempest—my friend Jack Rattlin has his leg broke by a fall from the main-yard—the behaviour of doctor Mackshane—fack opposes the amputation of his limb, in which he is seconded by Morgan and me, who undertake the cure, and perform it successfully.

THE captain was carried into his cabbin, so enraged with the treatment he had received, that
he ordered the fellow to be brought before him, that
he might have the pleasure of pistoling him with his
own hand; and would certainly have satisfied his revenge in this manner, had not the first lieutenant remonstrated against it, by observing that in all appearance, the fellow was not mad but desperate; that
he had been hired by some enemy of the captain to
assassing the could be brought to be kept in
irons till he could be brought to a court-marrial,
which, no doubt, would sift the affair to the bottom,

L 2

(by

the nows, ithbe take ite; vour ends, ach, ance. and eheld the you

who

fame

fate;

is 1-

rh

he

ad

ad

an

's,

im ad

hat

(by which means, important discoveries might be made) and then sentence the criminal to a death adequate to his demerits .-- This suggestion, improbable as it was, had the defired effect upon the captain. being exactly calculated for the meridian of his intellects; more especially, as doctor Mackshane espoused this opinion, in consequence of his previous declaration that the man was not mad .-- Morgan finding there was no more damage done, could not help difcovering by his countenance, the pleafure he enjoyed on this occasion; and while he bathed the doctor's face with an embrocation, ventured to alk him, Whether he thought there were more fools or madmen on board? But he would have been wifer in containing this fally, which his patient carefully laid up in his memory, to be taken notice of at a more fit feafon .-- Mean while we weighed anchor, and on our way to the Downs, the madman, who was treated as a prisoner, took an opportunity, while the centinel attended him at the head, to leap over-board, and frustrate the revenge of the captain .-- We flaid not long at the Downs, but took the benefit of the first easterly wind to go round to Spithead; where having received on board provisions for fix months, we failed from St. Hellens in the grand fleet bound for the West-Indies, on the ever memorable expedition of Carthagena.

0

h

bi

h

no

th

a

an

m

an

Wa

26

an

ing

fhe

dea

the

fifty

It was not without great mortification I faw myself on the point of being transported to such a distant and unhealthy climate, destitute of every convenience that could render such a voyage supportable; and under the dominion of an arbitrary tyrant, whose command was almost intolerable: However, as these complaints were common to a great many on board, I resolved to submit patiently to my fate, and contrive to make myself as easy as the nature of the case would allow.

—We got out of the channel with a prosperous breeze, which died away, leaving us becalmed abouty

fifty leagues to the westward of the Lizard: But this state of inaction did not last long; for next night our main-top-fail was fplit by the wind, which in the morning increased to a hurricane. -- I was wakened by a most horrible din, occasioned by the play of the gun carriages upon the decks above, the cracking of cabbins, the howling of the wind through the shrouds, the confused noise of the ship's crew, the pipes of the boatswain and his mates, the trumpets of the lieutenants, and the clanking of the chain pumps.---Morgan, who had never been at fea before, turned out in a great hurry, crying, "Got have mercy and compassion upon us! I believe we have got upon 4 the confines of Lucifer and the d--ned!"---while poor Thomson lay quaking in his hammock, putting up petitions to heaven for our fafety .--- I got out of bed and joined the Welchman, with whom, (after having fortified ourselves with brandy) I went above; but if my fense of hearing was startled before, how must my sight be appalled in beholding the effects of the form! The fea was swelled into billows mountain-high, on the top of which our ship fometimes hung as if it was about to be precipitated to the abyls below! Sometimes we funk between two waves that rose on each side higher than our topmast head, and threatened by dashing together, to overwhelm us in a moment! Of all our fleet, confifting of a hundred and fifty fail, scarce twelve appeared, and these driving under their bare poles, at the mercy of the tempest. At length the mast of one of them gave way, and tumbled over-board with a hideous crash! Nor was the prospect in our own ship much more agreeable; a number of officers and failors ran backward and forward with diffraction in their looks, hollowing to one another, and undetermined what they should attend to first. Some clung to the yards, endeavouring to unbend the fails that were split into a thousand pieces stapping in the wind; others tried to L 3

-

d

ne

re

S.

nd

li-

elf

nd

nat

der

and

nts

ved

ake

w.

ous

uty

ifty

furl those which were yet whole, while the masts, at every pitch bent and quivered like twigs, as if they would have shivered into innumerable splinters!---While I confidered this scene with equal terror and aftonishment, one of the main-braces broke, by the shock whereof two failors were flung from the yard's arm into the sea, where they perished, and poor Jack Rattlin thrown down upon the deck, at the expence of a broken leg. Morgan and I ran immediately to his affiftance, and found a splinter of the shin-bone thrust by the violence of the fall through the skin: As this was a case of too great consequence to be treated without the authority of the doctor, I went down to his cabbin to inform him of the accident, as well as to bring up dreffings, which we always kept ready prepared .-- I entered his apartment without any ceremony, and by the glimmering of a lamp, perceived him on his knees, before fomething that very much resembled a crucifix; but this I will not insist upon, that I may not feem too much a flave to common report, which indeed affifted my conjecture on this occasion, by representing Dr. Mackshane as a member of the church of Rome .-- Be this as it will, he got up in a fort of confusion, occasioned (I suppose) by his being diffurbed in his devotion, and in a trice, fnatched the object of my suspicion from my sight.---After making an apology for my intrusion, I acquainted him with the fituation of Rattlin, but could by no means prevail upon him to vifit him on deck where he lay; he bade me defire the boatfwain to order some of the men to carry him down to the cockpit, and in the mean time (said he) I will direct Thomson to get ready the dreffings. When I signified to the boatswain the doctor's desire, he swore a terrible oath, that he could not spare one man from the deck, because he expected the masts would go by the board every minute .-- This piece of information did not at all contribute to my peace of mind; however.

66

"

ar

of

or

4

me

ever as my friend Rattlin complained very much. with the affiftance of Morgan, I supported him to the lower deck, whither Mr. Mackshane, after much intreaty, ventured to come, attended by Thomson with a box full of dreffings, and his own fervant, who carried a whole fet of capital instruments .-- He examined the fracture and the wound, and concluding from a livid colour extending itself upon the limb, that a mortification would enfue, refolved to amputate the leg immediately!--- This was a dreadful fentence to the patient, who recruiting himself with a quid of tobaceo, pronounced with a woful countenance, "What! is there no remedy, doctor?"----" must I be dock'd! can't you splice it?" -- " Assured-" ly, doctor Mackshane (said the first mate) with " fubmission, and deference, and veneration to your " fuperior abilities, and opportunities, and stations " (look you) I do apprehend, and conjecture, and " aver, that there is no occasion nor necessity to " fmite off this poor man's leg." "God Almighty " bless you, dear Welchman! (cried Rattlin) may " you have fair wind and weather wherefoever you're " bound, and come to an anchor in the road of " heaven at last." --- Mackshane, very much incensed at his mate's differing in opinion from him to openly, answered, that he was not bound to give an account of his practice to him; and in a peremptory tone. ordered him to apply the tourniquet .--- At the light of which, Jack starting up, cried, " Avast, avasted d-n " my heart, if you clap your nippers on me, till I "know wherefore !---Mr. Random, won't you lend " a hand towards faving my precious limb? Odd's " heart if lieutenant Bowling was here, he would " not fuffer Jack Rattlin's leg to be chopped off like " a piece of old junk."-This pathetic address to me, joined to my inclination to ferve my honest friend, and the reasons I had to believe there was no danger to select the danger

d

k

0

e

i-

a

m

by

on

v-

danger in delaying the amputation, induced me to declare myfelf of the first mate's opinion, and affirm that the preternatural colour of the skin, was owing to an inflammation occasioned by a contusion, and common in all fuch cases, without any indication of an approaching gangrene. Morgan, who had a great cpinion of my skill, manifestly exulted in my fellowthip, and asked Thomson's sentiments of the matter. in hopes of strengthening our affociation, with him too; but he being of a meek disposition, and either dreading the enmity of the furgeon, or fpeaking the dictates of his own judgment, in a modelt manner, espoused the opinion of Mackshane, who by this time, having confulted with himself, determined to act in such a manner, as to screen himself from cenfure; and at the same time revenge himself on us, for our arrogance in contradicting him .-- With this view, he demanded to know if we would undertake to cure the leg at our peril; that is, be answerable for the confequence. To this Morgan replied, that the lives of his creatures are in the hands of Got alone; and' it would be great prefumption in him to undertake for an event that was in the power of his Maker, no' more than the doctor could promife to cure all the fick to whom he administered his affistance; but if the patient would put himfelf under our direction. we would do our endeavour to bring his diftemper to a favourable iffue, to which, at prefent, we faw no obstruction .- I fignified my concurrence; and Rattlin was fo overjoyed, that shaking us both by the hands, he fwore no body elfe should touch him, and if he died, his blood should be upon his own head .-- Mr. Mackshane, flattering himself with the prospect of our miscarriage, went away, and left us to manage it as we should think proper; accordingly, having fawed off part of the splinter that stuck thro' the fkin, we reduced the fracture, dreffed the wound, applied the eighteen-tailed bandage, and put the leg

in a box, fecundem artem.—Every thing succeeded according to our wish, and we had the satisfaction, of not only preserving the poor fellow's leg, but likewise of rendering the doctor contemptible among the ship's company, who had all their eyes on us during the course of this cure, which was compleated in six weeks.

90.00.90 90.00 90.90 90.00 9

C H A P. XXIX.

Mackshane's malice——I am taken up and imprisoned for a spy——Morgan meets with the same fate——Thomson is tampered with to turn evidence against us——disdains the proposal, and is maltreated for his integrity——Morgan is released to assist the surgeon during an engagement with some French ships of war——I remain fettered on the poop, exposed to the enemy's shot, and grow delirious with fear,——am comforted after the battle by Morgan, who speaks freely of the captain; is over-heard by the centinel, who informs against him, and again imprisoned——Thomson grows desperate, and notwithstanding the remonstrances of Morgan and me, goes overboard in the night.

IN the mean time, the fform subsided into a brisk gale, that carried us into the warm latitudes, where the weather became intolerable, and the crew very sickly.—The doctor left nothing unattempted towards the completion of his vengeance against the Welchman and me. He went among the sick under pretence of enquiring into their grievances, with a view

L 5

of picking up complaints to our prejudice; but finding himself frustrated in that expectation by the good will we had procured from the patients by our diligence and humanity, he took the resolution of listening to our conversation, by hiding himself behind the canvass that surrounded our birth; here too he was detected by the boy of our mess, who acquainted us with this piece of behaviour, and one night, while we were picking a large bone of falt-beef, Morgan discerned something stir against our hangings, which immediately interpreting to be the doctor, he tipt me the wink, and pointed to the place, where I could perceive fomebody flanding; upon which, I fnatched up the bone, and levelled it with all my force at him, faying, "Whoever you are, take that for your curiofity."--It had the defired effect, for we heard the liftener tumble down, and afterwards crawl to his own cabbin .-- I applauded myself much for this feat, which turned out one of the most unlucky exploits of my life, Mackshane from that time marking me out for destruction .-- About a week thereafter, as I was going my rounds among the fick, I was taken prisoner, and carried to the poop by the master at arms, where I was loaded with irons, and flapled to the deck, on pretence that I was a fpy on board, and had conspired against the captain's life .--- How ridiculcus soever this imputation was, I did not fail to fuffer by it all the rigour that could be shewn to the worst of criminals, being exposed in this miserable condition to the fcorching heat of the fun by day, and the unwholfome damps by night, during the space of twelve days, in which I was neither brought to trial, nor examined touching the probability of my charge.-I had no fooner recovered the use of my reflection, which had been quite overthrown by this accident, than I fent for Thomson, who, after condoling me on the occasion, hinted, that I owed this misfortune to the hatred of the doctor, who had given

almost

given an information against me to the captain, in confequence of which I was arrested, and all my papers feized. - While I was curfing my capricious fate, I faw Morgan ascend the poop, guarded by two corporals, who made him fit down by me, that he might be pinioned in the same machine.-Notwithstanding my situation, I could scarce refrain from laughing at the countenance of my fellow prisoner, who, without speaking one word, allowed his feet to be inclosed in the rings provided for that purpose; but when they pretended to fasten him on his back. he grew outragious, and drawing a large cuteau from his fide-pocket, threatned to rip up the belly of the first man that should approach him, in order to treat him in fuch an unworthy manner. - They were preparing to use him very roughly, when the lieutenant on the quarter-deck, called up to them to let him remain as he was. - He then crept towards me, and taking me by the hand, bid me " put my trust in "Got."- And looking at Thomson, who sat by us trembling, with a pale vifage, told him, there were two more rings for his feet, and he should be glad to find him in fuch good company. - But it was not the intention of our adversary to include the fecond mate in our fate: Him he expected to be his drudge in attending the fick, and, if possible; his evidence against us: With this view he founded him afar off, but finding his integrity incorruptible; harraffed him fo much out of spite, that in a short time this mild creature grew weary of his life.

While I and my fellow-prisoner comforted each other in our tribulation, the admiral discovered four fail to leeward, and made fignal for our thip and four more to chace: Hereupon every thing was cleared for an engagement, and Mackshane foreseeing he should have occasion for more assistants than one; obtained Morgan's liberty; while I was left in this deplorable posture to the chance of battle. - It was L 6

almost dark when we came up with the sternmost chace, which we hailed, and enquired who they were; they gave us to understand they were French men of war, upon which captain Oakhum commanded them to fend their boat on board of him; but they refused, telling him, if he had any business with them, to come on board of their ship: He then threatned to pour in a broad-fide upon them, which they promifed to return. - Both fides were as good as their word, and the engagement began with great fury. - The reader may guess how I passed my time, lying in this helpless situation, amidst the terrors of a fea-fight; expecting every moment to be cut afunder or dashed in pieces by the enemy's shot! I endeavoured to compose myself as much as possible, by reflecting that I was not a whit more exposed than those who were stationed about me; but when I beheld them employed without intermission in annoying the foe, and encouraged by the fociety and behaviour of one another, I could eafily perceive a wide difference between their condition and mine: However, I concealed my agitation as well as I could, till the head of the officer of marines, who flood near me, being that off, bounced from the deck athwart my face, leaving me well night blinded with brains .- I could contain myself no longer, but began to bellow with all the strength of my lungs; when a drummer coming towards me, asked if I was wounded, and before I could answer, received a great shot in his belly which tore out his intrails, and he fell flat on my breaft. - This accident entirely bereft me of all difcretion: I redoubled my cries, which were drowned in the noise of the battle; and finding myself diffegarded, loft all patience, and became frantick; I vented my rage in oaths and execrations, till my fpirits being quite exhausted, I remained quiet and infenfible of the load that oppressed me. - The engagement lasted till broad day, when captain Oakhum, finds

"

te

fa

C

ing he was like to gain neither honour nor advantage by the affair, pretended to be undeceived by feeing their colours; and hailing the ship with whom he had fought all night, protested he believed them Spaniards. and the guns being filenced on each fide, ordered the barge to be hoifted out, and went on board of the French commodore. - Our loss amounted to ten killed, and eighteen wounded, most part of whom afterwards died. - My fellow-mates had no fooner dispatched their business in the cock-pit, than, full of friendly concern, they came to visit me. - Morgan afcending first, and seeing my face almost covered with brains and blood, concluded I was no longer a man for this world; and calling to Thomson with great emotion, bid him come up, and take his laft farewel of his comrade and countryman, who was posting to a petter place, where there were no Mackshanes nor Oakhums to asperse and torment him. -"No, (faid he, taking me by the hand) you are go-"ing to a country where there is more respect shewn "to unfortunate shentlemen, and where you will " have the fatisfaction of peholding your adversaries "-toffing upon pillows of purning primftone,"-Thomson alarmed at this apostrophe, made hafte to the place where I lay, and fitting down by me, with tears in his eyes, enquired into the nature of my calamity. - By this time I had recollected myfelf for far as to be able to converse rationally with my friends, whom, to their great fatisfaction, I immediately undeceived with regard to their apprehension of my being mortally wounded. - After I had got myself disengaged from the carnage in which I wallowed, and partaken of a refreshment which my friends brought along with them, we entered into discourse upon the hardships we sustained, and spoke very freely of the authors of our mifery: but our difcourse being overheard by the centinel who guarded me, he was no fooner relieved, than he reported to the

the captain every fyllable of our conversation, according to the orders he had received: The effect of this foon appeared in the arrival of the mafter at arms, who replaced Morgan in his former station; and gave the fecond mate a caution to keep a ffrict guard over his tongue, if he did not choose to accompany us in our confinement. Thomson forefeeing that the whole flavery of attending the fick and wounded, as well as the cruelty of Mackshane, must now fall upon his shoulders, grew desperate at the prospect, and though I never heard him swear before, imprecated dreadful curies on the heads of his oppressors, declaring that he would rather quit life altogether, than be much longer under the power of fuch barbarians. - I was not a little startled at his vivacity, and endeavoured o alleviate his complaints, by reprefenting the fubject of my own, with as much aggravation as it would bear, by which comparison he might see the ballance of missortune lay on my fide, and take an example from me of fortitude and fubmission, till such time as we could procure redrefs, which (I hoped) was not far off, confidering, that we should probably be in a harbour in less than three days, where we should have an opportunity of preferring our complaints to the admiral. - The Welchman joined in my remonstrances, and was at great pains to demonstrate, that it was every man's duty as well as interest to relign himself to the divine will, and look upon himself as a centinel upon duty, who is by no means at liberty to leave his post before he is relieved. — Thomfon listened attentively to what we faid, and at last, shedding a flood of tears, shook his head, and left us without making any reply. — About eleven at night he came to fee us again, with a fettled gloom on his countenance, and gave us to understand, that he had undergone excessive toil since he saw us, and in recompence, had been grofly abused by the doctor, who

fign of taking away his life and that of the captain. After some time spent in mutual exhortation, he got up, and squeezing me by the hand with an uncommon fervour, cried, "God bless you both;" and left us to wonder at his singular manner of parting with us, which did not fail to make an impression on us both.

Next morning, when the hour of visitation came round, this unhappy young man was missing, and after strict search, supposed to have gone over-board in the night; and this was certainly the case.

CHAP. XXXII.

We lament the fate of our companion—the captain offers Morgan his liberty, which he refuses to accept—We are brought before him and examined—Morgan is sent back into custody, whither also I am remanded, after a curious trial.

The Enews of this event affected my fellow-prifoner and me extremely, as our unfortunate companion had justly acquired by his amiable disposition, the love and esteem of us both; and the more we regretted his untimely fate, the greater horror we conceived for the villain who was undoubtedly the occasion of it.— This abandoned miscreant did not discover the least symptom of concern for Thomfon's death, although he must have been conscious to himself, of having driven him by ill usage to that satal resolution; but desired the captain to set Morgan at liberty again to look after the patients. Accordingly, one of the corporals was sent up to unsetter him; he protested he would not be released until he should

knowfor what he was confined; nor would he be a tennis-ball nor a fhittle-cock, nor a trudge, nor a scullion to any captain under the fun.-Oakhum finding him obstinate, and fearing it would not be in his power to exercise his tyranny much longer withimpunity, was willing to shew some appearance of justice, and therefore ordered us both to be brought before him on the quarter-deck, where he fat in state, with his clerk on one fide, and his counfellor Mackshane on the other. -- When we approached, he honoured us with this falutation: "So, gentlemen, damn my " blood! many a captain in the navy would have " ordered you both to be tuck'd up to the yard's arm, "without either judge or jury, for the crimes you " have been guilty of; but damn my blood, I have " too much good nature, in allowing fuch dogs as " you to make your defence." --- " Captain Oakhum, " (faid my fellow-fufferer) certainly it is in your power (Got help the while) to tuck us all up at " your will and defire, and pleasures. --- And perhaps it would be petter for fome of us to be tucked up, than undergo the miseries to which we have "been exposed. --- So may the farmer hang his kids " for his diversion, and amusement, and mirth; but " there is such a thing as justice, if not upon earth, " furely in heaven, that will punish with fire and " primitone all those that take away the lives of in-"nocent people out of wantonness and parparity " (look you) -- In the mean time, I shall be glad to " know the crimes laid to my charge, and fee the perfon who accuses me." --- " That you shall " (faid the captain) here doctor, what have you to " fay?" --- Mackshane stepping forward, hemmed a good while, in order to clear his throat, and before he began, Morgan accosted him thus: "Doc-" tor Mackshane, look in my face --- look in the face " of an honest man, who abhors a false witness as " he abhors the tevil, and Got be judge between you MULLA

and me."-The doctor not minding this conjuration, made the following speech, as near as I can remember: - " I'll tell you what, Mr. Morgan, to "be fure what you fay is just, in regard to an honest " man, and if fo be it appears as how you are an 66 honest man, then it is my opinion, that you de-" ferve to be acquitted, in relation to that there af-" fair; for I tell you what, captain Oakhum is re-" folved for to do every body justice. - As for my own part, all that I have to alledge, is that I have been informed, you have spoken disrespectful 66-words against your captain, who to be fure is the most honourable and generous commander in " the king's fervice, without asparagement or accep-"tation of man, woman, or child."-Having uttered this elegant harrangue, on which he feemed to plume himfelf, Morgan replied, " I do partly guess and conceive, and understand your meaning, "which I wish could be more explicite: But how? ever, I'do suppose, I am not to be condemned upon bare hear-fay; or if I am convicted of fpeaking. difrespectfully of captain Oakhum, I hope there is " no treason in my words." - " But there's mutiny. by God, and that's death by the articles of war (cried Oakhum) - In the mean time, let the witnesses be called."--- Hereupon Mackshane's fervant appeared, and the boy of our mess whom they had feduced and tutored for the purpole. - The first declared, that Morgan, as he descended the cockpit ladder one day, curfed the captain and called him a favage beaft, faying, he ought to be hunted down as an enemy to mankind. - "This (faid the) " clerk) is a strong presumption of a design formed against the captain's life. - For why? It presuppo-6 fes malice afore-thought, and a criminal intention " a priori. - " Right (faid the captain to this mifer-" able grub, who had been an attorney's boy) you " shall have law enough; here's Cook and Littlejohn

" for it." This evidence was confirmed by the boy, who affirmed, he heard the first mate fay, that the captain had no more bowels than a bear, and the furgeon had no more brains than an ass .-- Then the centinel who heard our discourse on the poop was examined, " and informed the court that the Welchman affured me, captain Oakhum and doctor Mackshane would tofs upon billows of burning brimftone in hell for their barbarity. - The clerk observed, that here was an evident prejudication, which confirmed the former fuspicion of a conspiracy against the life of captain" Oakhum; for, because, how could Morgan so pofitively pronounce that the captain and furgeon would be damned, unless he had intention to make away with them before they could have time to repent? - This fage explanation had great weight with our noble commander, who exclaimed, "What have " you to fay to this, Taffy? you feem to be taken" " all a-back, brother, hah!" Morgan was too" much of a gentleman to disown the text, although he absolutely denied the truth of the comment to Upon which the captain, ftrutting up to him, with a ferocious countenance, faid, "So, Mr. fon of a bitch," "you confess you honoured me with the names of bear and beaft, and pronounced my damnation Damn my heart! I have a good mind to have "you brought to a court-martial and hanged, you "dog."-Here Mackshane having occasion for an affiftant, interpofed, and begged the captain to-pardon Mr. Morgan, with his wonted goodness, upon condition that he the delinquent should make fuch fubmiffion as the nature of his mifdemanour demanded .- Upon which the Cambro-Briton, who on this occasion would have made no submission to the Great Mogul, furrounded with his guards, thanked the doctor for his mediation, and acknowledged himfelf in the wrong for calling the image of Got a peaft, " but (faid he) I spoke by metaphor, and parable, cc and

" and comparison, and types; as we signify meek-" ness by a lamb, letchery by a goat, and craftiness by a fox; fo we liken ignorance to an afs, and bru-" tality to a bear, and fury to a tyger; therefore I made " use of these similies to express my sentiments (look " you) and what I faid, before Got, I will not un-" fay before man nor peaft neither." - Oakhum was fo provoked at this infolence (as he termed it) that he ordered him forthwith to be carried to the place of his confinement, and his clerk to proceed on the examination of me. — The first question put to me, was touching the place of my nativity, which I declared to be the north of Scotland .- " The north " of Ireland more like, cried the captain) but we " shall bring you up presently."-He then asked what religion I professed; and when I answered, "The Protestant," swore I was as arrant a Roman as ever went to mass. - "Come, come, clerk, (conti-" nued he) catechife him a little on this subject."-But before I relate the particulars of the clerk's enquiries, it will not be amiss to inform the reader that our commander himself was an Hibernian, and, if not shrewdly belied, a Roman Catholic to boot.-"You tay you are a Protestant (faid the clerk) " make the fign of the cross with your fingers, fo, " and fwear upon it to that affirmation." - When I was about to perform this ceremony, the captain cried with some emotion, "No, no, damme! "I'll have no profanation neither. - But go on " with your interrogations." -- "Well then, (pro-" ceeded my examiner) how many facraments are "there?" - To which I replied, "Two." -"What are they? (faid he.)" I answered, "Bap-" tism and the Lord's supper." - " And so you would explode confirmation and marriage altoge-" ther? (faid Oakhum) I thought this fellow was a " rank Roman." - The clerk, though he was bred under an attorney, could not refrain from blushing at this

this blunder, which he endeavoured to conceal, by observing, that these decoys would not do with me who feemed to be an old offender. - He went on with asking, if I believed in transubstantiation; but I treated the notion of a real presence with such difrefpect that his patron was fcandalized at my impiety, and commanded him to proceed to the plot, - Whereupon this miferable pettifogger told me, there was great reason to suspect me of being a spy on board; and that I had entered into a conspiracy with Thomfon and others not yet detected, against the life of captain Oakhum. - Which accusation they pretended to support by the evidence of our boy, who declared he had often heard the deceased Thomson and me whifpering together, and could diftinguish the words, "Oakhum, rascal, poison, pistol." By which it appeared, we did intend to use finister means to accomplish his destruction. That the death of Thomson feemed to confirm this conjecture, who, either feeling the stings of remorfe, for being engaged in such a horrid confederacy, or fearing a discovery, by which he must have infallibly suffered an ignominious death, had put a fatal period to his own existence. - But what established the truth of the whole, was a book in cypher found among my papers, which exactly tallied with one found in his cheft, after his difappearance: This, he observed, was a presumption very near proof positive, and would determine any jury in christendom to find me guilty .- In my own defence, I alledged that I had been dragged on board at first very much against my inclination, as I could prove by the evidence of some people now in the ship, confequently could have no delign of becoming fpy at that time; and ever fince had been entirely out of the reach of any correspondence that could justly intail that suspicion upon me! - As for conspiring against my captain's life, it could not be supposed that any man in his right wits would harbour the least thought of fuch an undertaking, which he could not possibly perform without certain infamy and ruin to himself, even if he had all the inclination in the world .-- That allowing the boy's evidence to be true (which I affirmed was false and malicious) nothing conclusive could be gathered from a few incoherent words: Neither was the fate of Mr. Thomson a circumstance more favourable for the charge; for I had in my pocket a letter which too well explained that mystery, in a very different manner from that which was supposed: With these words I produced the following letter, which Jack Rattlin brought to me the very day after Thomson disappeared; and told me it was committed to his care by the deceased, who made him promise not to deliver it sooner. The clerk taking it out of my hand, read aloud the contents, which were these:

Dear Friend,

" T A M so much oppressed with the fatigue I daily and nightly undergo, and the barbarous ulage " of doctor Mackshane, who is bent on your destruc-" tion, as well as mine, that I am refolved to free " myfelf from this miserable life, and before you re-" ceive this, shall be no more. I could have wished " to die in your good opinion, which I am afraid I " shall forfeit by the last act of my life; but if you " cannot acquit me, I know you will at least pre-" ferve some regard for the memory of an unfortunate " young man who loved you. - I recommend it to " you, to beware of Mackshane, whose revenge is " implacable. --- I wish all prosperity to you and " Mr. Morgan, to whom pray offer my last respects, " and beg to be remembered as your unhappy friend " and countryman.

This letter was no fooner read, than Mackshane, in a transport of rage, snatched it out of the clerk's hands, and tore it into a thousand pieces, saying, it was a villainous forgery, contrived and executed by myfelf. --- The captain and clerk declared themselves of the fame opinion, notwithstanding I infisted on having the remains of it compared to other writings of Thomson, which they had in their possession; and I was ordered to answer the last article of my accusation, namely, the book of cyphers found among my papers. -- "That is eafily done, (faid I.) What " you are pleased to call cyphers, are no other than " the Greek characters, in which, for my amusement, I kept a diary of every thing remarkable " that has occurred to my observation fince the be-" ginning of the voyage, till the day on which I was put in irons; and the same method was practifed " by Mr. Thomson, who copied mine." --- " A ve-" ry likely flory! (cried Mackshane) what occasion " was there for uling Greek characters, if you were " not afraid of discovering what you had wrote? ---But what d'ye talk of Greek characters? --- D'ye think I am so ignorant of the Greek language, as " not to diffinguish its letters from these, which are " no more Greek than Chinese? No, no, I will " not give up my knowledge of the Greek for you, " nor none that ever came from your country." So faying, with an unparalleled effronterie, he repeated fome gibberish, which by the found seemed to be Irish, and made it pass for Greek with the captain, who looking at me with a contemptuous fneer, exclaimed, " Ah ha! have you caught a tartar?" I could not help smiling at the consummate affurance of this Hibernian, and offered to refer the dispute to any body on board who understood the Greek alphabet: Upon which Morgan was brought back, and being made acquainted with the affair, took the book and read a whole

whole page in English, without hesitation, deciding the controverfy in my favour. --- The doctor was fo far from being out of countenance at this, that he affirmed Morgan was in the fecret, and repeated from his own invention. --- Oakhum faid, "Ay, ay, I fee "they are both in a story:" And dismissed my fellowmate to his cock-loft, although I proposed that he and I should read and translate separately, any chapter or verse in the Greek-testament in his possession, by which it would appear whether we or the furgeon fpoke truth. --- Not being endued with eloquence enough to convince the captain that there could be no juggle nor confederacy in this expedient, I begged to be examined by fome unconcerned perfon on board, who understood Greek: Accordingly the whole ship's company, officers and all were called upon deck, among whom it was proclaimed, that if any of them could speak Greek, he or they so qualified should ascend the quarter-deck immediately. ---After some pause two fore-mast-men came up and professed their skill in that language, which (they faid) they acquired during feveral voyages to the Levant, among the Greeks of the Morea. The captain exulted much in this declaration, and put my journal-book into the hands of one of them, who candidly owned he could neither read nor write; the other acknowledged the fame degree of ignorance, but pretended to speak the Greek lingo with any man on board; and addressing himself to me, pronounced fome fentences of a barbarous corrupted language, which I did not understand. --- I afferted that the modern Greek was as different from that spoke and written by the ancients, as the English used now from the old Saxon spoke in the time of Hengist; and as I had only learned the true original tongue, in which Homer, Pindar, the Evangelists and other great men of antiquity wrote, it could not be supposed that I should know any thing of an imperfect Gothic dialect

e

S

e

11

1,

0

d

1,

0

ı,

ot

i-

ly

n

de

a

ole

dialect that rose on the ruins of the former, and scarce retained any traces of the old expression. -- But if doctor Mackshane, who pretended to be master of the Greek language, could maintain a conversation with these seamen, I would retract what I had said, and be content to fuffer any punishment he should think proper to inflict. - I had no fooner uttered these words, than the furgeon knowing one of the fellows to be his countryman, accosted him in Irish, and was answered in the same brogue; then a dialogue ensued between them, which they affirmed to be in Greek, after having secured the secrecy of the other tar, who had his cue in the language of the Morea from his companion, before they would venture to affert fuch an intrepid falfehood, -- "I thought (faid Oakhum) we should discover the imposture at last. -- Let the rascal be carried back to his confinement. --- I find he must dangle." - Having nothing further to urge in my own behalf, before a court fo prejudiced with spite, and fortified with ignorance against truth, I fuffered myfelf to be reconducted peaceably to my fellow-prisoner, who hearing the particulars of my trial, lifted up his hands and eyes to heaven, and uttered a dreadful groan; and not daring to disburthen his thoughts to me by fpeech, left he might be overheard by the centinel, burst forth into a Welch song, which he accompanied with a thousand contortions of face, and violent gestures of body.

of a beloarous compiled laisoner,

which I did not underland. - I stored that the inc-

dern Grack was as different from this fooks and west-

the ald Educat spotte in the time of inquestry and as

the and enter as the English aled made from

I had our course one tracondrinal tender, in which of A-A-P. Indae, the Evacyolitis and other processing of artifular, wrose, it could not be turbed to trace the trace of artifular trace on the first Pinould know any the first of artifulation of the could be traced to the co

T

W

ma

a f

ret

my

per he

uni wh ene

CHAP. XXXI.

I discover a subornation against me, by means of a quarrel between two of the evidences; in consequence of which, I am set at liberty, and prevail upon Morgan to accept of his freedom on the same terms——Mackshane's malice——we arrive at Jamaica, from whence in a short time we heat up to Hispaniola, in conjunction with the West-India squadron—we take in water, sail again, and arrive at Caribagena—restections on our conduct there.

MEAN while, a quarrel happening between the two modern Greeks, the one to be revenged of the other, came and discovered to us the mystery of Mackshane's dialogue, as I have explained it above. This detection coming to the ears of the doctor, who was fensible that (now we were in fight of Jamaica) we should have an opportunity of clearing ourselves before a court-martial, and at the same time, of making his malice and ignorance conspicuous, he interceded for us with the captain fo effectually, that in a few hours we were fet at liberty, and ordered to return to our duty.--- This was a happy event for me, my whole body being bliftered by the fun, and my limbs benumbed by want of motion: But I could scarce persuade the Welchman to accept of this indulgence, he perfifting in his obstinacy to remain in irons, until he fhould be discharged by a court-martial, which he belived would also do him justice on his enemies; at length I represented to him the precarious iffue of a trial, the power and interest of his ad-Vol. I.

versaries, and slattered his revenge with the hope of wreaking his resentment with his own hands upon Mackshane after our return to England: This last argument had more weight with him than all the rest, and prevailed upon him to repair with me to the cockpit, which I no sooner entered, than the idea of my departed friend presented itself to my remembrance, and filled my eyes with tears.—We discharged from our mess the boy who had acted so persidiously, not-withstanding his tears, intreaties, and professions of penitence for what he had done; but not before he had confessed that the surgeon had bribed him to give evidence against us, with a pair of stockings and a couple of old check shirts, of which his servant had

fince plundered him.

W. W. Tay

The keys of our chests and lockers being fent to us by the doctor, we detained the messenger until we had examined the contents; and my fellow-mate finding all his cheshire cheese consumed to a crust, his brandy exhaufted, and his onions gone, was feized with a fit of choler, which he discharged on Mackshane's man in oaths and execrations, threatening to profecute him as a thief .-- The fellow fwore in his turn that he never had the keys in his possession till that time, when he received them from his mafter, with orders to deliver them to us .-- " As Got is my judge " cried Morgan) and my falfation, and my witness, whosoever has pilfered my provisions, is a loufy, or peggarly, rafcally knave! and by the foul of my " grandfire! I will impeach, and accuse, and indict "him of a roppery, if I did but know who he is." --- Had this happened at fea where we could not repair the lofs, in all probability this descendent of Cadwallader would have loft his wits entirely: but when I observed, how easy it would be to remedy this raultry misfortune, he became more calm, and reconciled himself to the occasion .-- A little while after, the furgeon cane into the birth, under pretence of taking fomething out of the medicine-cheft, and with a smiling aspect, wished us joy of our deliverance, which (he faid) he had been at great pains to obtain of the captain, who was very justly incensed at our behaviour; but he (the doctor) had paffed his word for our future conduct, and he hoped we should give him no cause to repent of his kindness---He expected (no doubt) an acknowledgment from us for this pretended piece of fervice, as well as a general amnesty of what was past; but he had to do with people who were not quite so apt to forgive injuries as he imagined, or to forget that if our deliverance was owing to his mediation, our calamity was occasioned by his malice; I therefore sat silent while my companion answered, "Ay, ay, 'tis no matter---"Got knows the heart---there is a time for all " things, as the wife man faith, there is a time for " throwing away stones, and a time to gather them " up again .-- He feemed to be disconcerted at this reply, and went away in a pet, muttering fomething about "Ingratitude" and "Fellows," of which wedid not think fit to take any notice.

Our fleet having joined another that waited for us, lay at anchor about a month in the-harbour of Port-Royal in Jamaica, during which time fomething of consequence was certainly transacted; notwithstanding the infinuations of some who affirmed we had no business at all in that place---that in order to take the advantage of the feafon, proper for our enterprize, the West-Indian squadron, which had previous notice of our coming, ought to have joined us at the west-end of Hispaniola with necessary stores and refreshments, from whence we could have failed directly to Carthagena, before the enemy could put themselves in a good posture of defence, or indeed have an inkling of our delign. Be this as it will, we failed from Jamaica, and in ten days or a fortnight, beat up against the wind as far as the isle of M 2 Vache,

f

t

S

Vache, with an intention, as was faid, to attack the French fleet, then supposed to be lying near that place; but before we arrived they had failed for Europe, having first dispatched an advice-boat to Carthagena with an account of our being in those feas, as also of our strength and destination .--- We loitered here fome days longer, taking in wood, and brackish water, in the use whereof, however, our admiral feemed to confult the health of the men, by restricting each to a quart a day .--- At length we fet fail, and arrived in a bay to the windward of Carthagena, where we came to an anchor, and lay at our ease ten days longer .--- Here again, certain malicious people take occasion to blame the conduct of their superiors, by faying, that in fo doing, they not only unprofitably wasted time, which was very precious, considering the approach of the rainy feafon, but also allowed the Spaniards to recollect themselves at the approach of an English fleet, at least three times as numerous as ever appeared in that part of the world before. But if I might be allowed to give my opinion of the matter, I would ascribe this delay to the generosity of our chiefs, who fcorned to take any advantage that fortune might give them, even over an enemy. At last, however, we weighed, and anchored again fomewhat nearer the harbour's mouth, where we made shift to land our marines, who encamped on the beech, in despite of the enemies shot, which knocked a good many of them on the head .-- This piece of conduct in choosing a camp under the walls of an enemy's fortification, which I believe never happened before, was, practifed, I prefume, with a view of accustoming the soldiers to stand fire, who were not as yet much used to discipline, most of them having been taken from the plough-tail a few months before. This again has furnished matter for censure against the ministry, for fending a few raw recruits on fuch an important enterprize, while fo many veteran regiments lay inactive at home: But furely our governors had their reasons for so doing, which possibly may be disclosed with other secrets of the deep. Perhaps they were loath to risk their best troops on such desperate service; or, the colonels and field officers of the old corps, who, generally speaking, enjoyed their commissions as sine-cures or pensions, for some domestic services tendered to the court, resuled to embark in such a dangerous and precarious undertaking; for which, no doubt, they are to be much commended.

02929292929292929292929292929292929292

C H A P. XXXII.

Our land forces being disembarked, erect a fascine battery—our ship is ordered, with four more, to batter the fort of Bocca Chica—Mack-shane's cowardice—the chaplain's phrenzy—bonest Rattlin loses one hand—his beroism and restections on the battle—Crampley's behaviour to me during the heat of the fight.

OUR forces being landed and stationed as I have already mentioned, set about erecting a fascine battery to cannonade the principal fort of the enemy, and in something more than three weeks, it was ready to open. That we might do the Spaniards as much honour as possible, it was determined in a council of war, that five of our largest ships should attack the fort on one side, while the battery, streng hened by two mortars and twenty-four cohorns, should ply it on the other.

Accordingly, the fignal for our ship to engage, among others, was hoisted, we being adve tifed M 2

the night before, to make every thing clear for that purpose: and in so doing, a difference happened between Captain Oakhum and his well-beloved coufin and counfellor Mackshane, which had well nigh terminated in an open rupture .-- The doctor, who had imagined there was no more danger of being hurt by the enemy's shot in the cockpit than in the center of the earth, was lately informed that a furgeon's mate had been killed in that place, by a cannon-ball from two fmall redoubts that were destroyed before the difembarkation of our foldiers; and therefore infifted upon having a platform raifed for the convenience of the fick and wounded, in the after-hold, where he deemed himself more secure than on the deck above. -- The captain, offended at this extraordinary propofal, accused him of pufillanimity, and told him there was no room in the hold for fuch an occasion; or if there was, he could not expect to be indulged more than the rest of the surgeons of the navy, who used the cockpit for that purpose: Fear rendering Mackshane obstinate, he persisted in his demand, and shewed his instructions, by which it was authorised: the captain fwore these instructions were dictated by a parcel of lazy poltroons who were never at fea; nevertheless he was obliged to comply, and sent for the carpenter to give him orders about it: But before any fuch measure could be taken, our fignal was thrown out, and the doctor compelled to trust his carcase in the cockpit, where Morgan and I were bufy in putting our instruments and dressings in order.

Our ship, with others destined for this service, immediately weighed, and in less than half an hour came to an anchor before the castle of Bocca-Chica, with a spring upon our cable—And the cannonading (which indeed was terrible!) began. The surgeon, after having crossed himself, fell slat on the deck; and the chaplain and purser, who were stationed with us, in quality of assistants, followed his example, while

while the Welchman and I fat upon a cheft looking at one another with great discomposure, scarce able to refrain from the like proftration .--- And that the reader may know, it was not a common occasion that alarmed us thus, I must inform him of the particulars of this dreadful din that aftonished us. The fire of the Spaniards proceeded from eighty-four great guns, besides a mortar and small arms in Bocca Chica, thirty-fix in Fort St. Joseph, twenty in two fascine batteries, and four men of war, mounting fixty-four guns each .-- This was answered by our land battery mounted with twenty-one cannon, two mortars and twenty-four cohorns, and five great ships of eighty or feventy guns that fired without intermission .-- We had not been many minutes engaged, when one of the failors brought another on his back to the cockpit, where he toffed him down like a bag of oats, and pulling out his pouch, put a large chew of tobacco in his mouth without fpeaking a word; Morgan immediately examined the condition of the wounded man, and cried, " As I shall answer now, the man is as tead as my great-grandfather."——
Bead (faid his comrade) he may be dead now, for ought I know, but PII be damn'd if he was not alive when I took him up."--- So faying, he was about to return to his quarters, when I bade him carry the body along with him and throw it over board.—" D—n the body! (faid he) I think "tis fair enough if I take care of my own."----My fellow-mate matching up the amputation knife, pursued him half-way up the cockpit ladder, crying, You loufy rafcal, is this the church-yard, or the charnel-house, or the sepulchre, or the Golgotha of "the ship?"---but was stopt in his career by one calling, "Yo ho, avast there---scaldings"--- "Scaldings! (answered Morgan) Got knows 'tis hot enough indeed:---who are you?"---" Here's one " (replied the voice.") And I immediately knew it restant. M 4

66 to be that of my honest friend Jack Rattlin, who coming towards me, told me, with great deliberation, he was come to be dock'd at last, and discovered the remains of one hand which had been shattered to pieces with a grape shot .-- I lamented with unfeigned forrow his misfortune, which he bore with heroic courage, observing, that every shot had its commission: It was well it did not take him in the head; or if it had, what then? he should have died bravely, fighting for his king and country: Death was a debt which every man owed, and must pay; and that now was as well as another time. -- I was much pleafed and edified with the maxims of this fea-philosopher, who endured the amputation of his left hand without fhrinking; the operation being performed (at his request) by me, after Mackshane, who was with difficulty prevailed to lift his head from the deck, had declared there was a necessity for his losing the limb. --- While I was employed in dreffing the flump, I asked Jack's opinion of the battle, who shaking his head, frankly told me, he believed we should do no good; "For why, because instead of dropping an-" chor close under shore, where we should have had to 46 deal with one corner of Bocca Chica only, we had " opened the harbour, and exposed ourselves to the " whole fire of the enemy from their shipping and " Fort St. Joseph, as well as from the castle we inintended to cannonade; that befides, we lay at too great a distance to damage the walls, and three " parts in four of our shot did not take place; for "there was scarce any body on board, who under-" flood the pointing of a gun .-- Ah! God help us! " (continued he) if your kinfman lieutenant Bowling " had been here, we should have had other-guess-" work."--- By this time our patients had increased to fuch a degree, that we did not know which to begin with; and the first mate plainly told the furgeon, that if he did not get up immediately, and perform form his duty, he would complain of his behaviour to the admiral, and make application for his warrant .-- This effectually roused Mackshane, who was never deaf to an argument in which he thought his interest was concerned; he therefore rose up, and in order to strengthen his resolution, had recourse more than once to a case-bottle of rum which he freely communicated to the chaplain and purfer, who had as much need of fuch extraordinary infoiration as himself: Being thus supported, he went to work, and arms and legs were hewed down without mercy. --- The fumes of the liquor mounting into the parfon's brain, conspired with his former agitation of fpirits, to make him quite delirious; he stript himfelf to the skin, and besmearing his body with blood. could scarce be with-held from running upon deck in. that condition. Jack Rattlin, scandalized at this deportment, endeavoured to allay his transports with reason: but finding all he said ineffectual, and great confusion occasioned by his frolicks, he knocked him. down with his right hand, and by threats kept him. quiet in that state of humiliation .-- But it was not in the power of rum to elevate the purfer, who fat on the floor wringing his hands, and curfing the hour in which he left his peaceable profession of a brewer in Rochefter, to engage in fuch a life of terror and difquiet .-- While we diverted ourselves at the expence. of this poor devil, a shot happened to take us between: wind and water, and (its course being through the purfer's store-room) made a terrible havock and noise among the jars and bottles in its way, and disconcerted Mackshane so much, that he dropt his scalpeland falling down on his knees, pronounced his Paternofter aloud; the purser fell backward and lay without fense or motion; and the chaplain grew so outragious, that Rattlin with one hand could not keep him under; fo that we were obliged to confine him in the furgeon's cabbin, where he was no doubt guilty M 5 ot .

of a thousand extravagancies .-- Much about this time, my old antagonist Crampley came down, with express orders (as he faid) to bring me up to the quarter-deck, to dress a flight wound the captain had received by a folinter. His reason for honouring me in particular with this piece of fervice, being that in case I should be killed or disabled by the way, my death or mutilation would be of less consequence to the ship's company, than that of the doctor or his first mate.---At another time, perhaps I might have disputed this order, to which I was not bound to pay the least regard: but as I thought my reputation depended upon my compliance, I was refolved to convince my rival that I was no more afraid than he of exposing myself to danger .-- With this view I provided myself with dreffings, and followed him immediately to the quarter-deck, through a most infernal scene of slaughter. fire, fmoak, and uproar! Captain Oakhum, who leaned against the mizen mast, no sooner faw me approach in my shirt, with the sleeves tucked up to my arm-pits, and my hands dyed with blood, than he fignified his displeasure by a frown, and asked why the doctor himself did not come? I told him Cramoley had fingled me out, as if by express command; at which he feemed furprized, and threatned to punish the midshipman for his presumption, after the engagement: In the mean time I was fent back to my flation, and ordered to tell Mackshane, that the captain expected him immediately .-- I got fafe back and delivered my commission to the doctor, who flatly refused to quit the post assigned to him by his instructions: whereupon, Morgan, who (I believe) was jealous of my reputation for courage, undertook the affair, and ascended with great intrepidity .-- The captain finding the furgeon obstinate, fuffered himself to be dreffed, and fwore he would confine Mackshane as foon as the fervice should be over.

CHAP. XXXIII.

A breach being made in the walls, our soldiers give the assault, and take the place without opposition—our sailors at the same time become masters of all the other strengths near Bocca Chica, and take possession of the harbour—the good consequence of this success—we move nearer the town—find two forts deserted, and the channel blocked up with sunk vessels; which bowever, we find means to clear—land our soldiers at La Quinta—repulse a body of militia—attack the castle of St. Lazar, and are forced to retreat with great loss—the remains of our army are re imbarked—an effort of the admiral to take the town—the æconomy of our expedition described.

AVING cannonaded the fort, during the space of sour hours, we were all ordered to slip our cables, and sheer off; but next day the engagement was renewed, and continued from the morning till the afternoon, when the enemy's fire from Bocca Chica slackened, and towards evening quite silenced.—A breach being made on the other side, by our land-battery, large enough to admit a middle sized baboon, provided he could find means to climb up to it; our general proposed to give the affault that very night, and actually ordered a detachment on that duty: Providence stood our friend upon this occasion, and put it into the hearts of the Spaniards to abandon the fort, which might have been M 6

maintained by resolute men to the day of judgment against all the force we could exert in the attack. ---And while our foldiers took possession of the enemy's ramparts, without refistance, the same good luck attended a body of failors, who made themselves masters of fort St. Joseph, the fascine batteries, and one Spanish man of war; the other three being burnt or funk by the foe, that they might not fall into our hands. -- The taking of these forts, in the strength of which the Spaniards chiefly confided, made us masters of the outward harbour, and occasioned great joy among us; as we laid our accounts with finding little or no opposition from the town: And indeed, if a few great fhips had failed up immediately, before they had recovered from the confusion and despair that our unexpected fuccess had produced among them, it is not impossible that we might have finished the affair to our fatisfaction, without any more blood-shed; but this our heroes disdained, as a barbarous infultover the enemy's diffres; and gave them all the refpite they could defire, in order to recollect themfelves. - In the mean time, Mackshane taking the advantage of this general exultation, waited on our captain, and pleaded his own cause so effectually, that he was re-established in his good graces; and as for Crampley, there was no more notice taken of his behaviour towards me, during the action. -- But of all the confequences of the victory, none was more grateful than plenty of fresh water, after we had languished five weeks on the allowance of a purfer's quart per diem for each man, in the Torrid Zone, where the fun was vertical, and the expence of bodily fluid fo great, that a gallon of liquor could fcarce supply the waste of twenty four hours; especially as our provision consisted of putrid salt beef, to which the failors gave the name of Irish horse; falt pork of New-England, which though neither fish nor flesh, favoured of both; bread from the same country, every biscuit

biscuit whereof, like a piece of clock-work moved by its own internal impulse, occasioned by the myriads of infects that dwelt within it; and butter ferved out by the gill, that tasted like train-oil thickened with falt. Instead of small beer, each man was allowed three half quarterens of brandy or rum, which were distributed every morning, diluted with a certain quantity, of his water, without either fugar or fruit to render it palatable, for which reason, this composition, was by the failors not unaptly stiled Necessity. Nor was this limitation of simple element owing to a. fcarcity of it on board, there being at this time water enough in the ship for a voyage of fix months, at. the rate of half a gallon per day to each man: But this fast must (I suppose) have been injoined by way of pennance on the ship's company for their fins; or rather with a view to mortify them into a contempt. of life, that they might thereby become more resolute: and regardless of danger. How simple then do those. people argue, who ascribe the great mortality among. us, to our bad provision and want of water; and affirm, that a great many valuable lives might have been faved, if the useless transports had been employed in fetching fresh stock, turtle, fruit, and other refreshments from Jamaica, and other adjacent islands, for the use of the army and fleet! seeing it is to behoped, that those who died went to a better place, and those who furvived were the more easily maintained. ---After all, a sufficient number remained to fall before the walls of St. Lazar, where they behaved like their own country mastifs, which shut their eyes, run into the jaws of a bear, and have their heads crushed for. their valour.

But to return to my narration: After having put, garrifons into the forts we had taken, and re-imbarked our foldiers and artillery, a piece of fervice that detained us more than a week; we ventured up to the mouth of the inner harbour, guarded by a.

large fortification on one fide, and a small redoubt on the other, both of which were deferted before our approach, and the entrance of the harbour blocked up by feveral old galleons and two men of war that the enemy had in the channel. --- We made shift, however, to open a passage for some ships, that favoured a fecond landing of our troops at a place called La Quinta, not far from the town, where, after a faint refistance from a body of Spaniards, who opposed their difembarkation, they encamped with a defign of belieging the castle of St. Lazar, which overlooked and commanded the city: Whether our renowned general had no body in his army who knew how to approach it in form, or that he trufted entirely to the fame of his arms, I shall not determine; but certain it is, a resolution was taken in a council of war, to attack the place with musquetry only: This was put in execution, and succeeded accordingly; the enemy giving them fuch an hearty reception, that the greateft part of the detachment took up their everlasting refidence on the fpot -- Our Chief not relishing this kind of complaifance in the Spaniards, was wife enough to retreat on board with the remains of his army, which, from eight thousand able men landed on the heach near Bocca Chica, was now reduced to fifteen hundred fit for service. --- The sick and wounded were squeezed into certain vessels, which thence obtained the name of hospital ships, though methinks: they scarce deserved such a creditable title, seeing few of them could boaft of their furgeon, nurse or cook; and the space between decks was so confined, that the miferable patients had not room to fit upright. in their beds. Their wounds and stumps being neglected, contracted fifth and putrefaction, and millions of maggots were hatched amidst the corruption of their fores. This inhuman difregard was imputed? to the fearcity of furgeons; though it is well known that every great ship in the fleet could have spared one-

fpe-

at least for this duty; an expedient which would have been more than sufficient to remove this shocking inconvenience: But, perhaps the general was too much of a gentleman to ask a favour of this kind from his fellow-chief, who, on the other hand, would not derogate so much from his own dignity, as to offer fuch affistance unasked; for I may venture to affirm, that by this time the Dæmon of discord with her sooty wings, had breathed her influence upon our counfels; and it might be faid of these great men, (I hope they will pardon the comparison) as of Cæsar and Pompey, the one could not brook a superior. and the other was impatient of an equal: So that between the pride of one and infolence of another, the enterprize miscarried, according to the proverb. Between two stools the backfide falls to the ground." - Not that I would be thought to liken any public concern to that opprobrious part of the human body. though I might with truth affert, if I durst use such a vulgar idiom, that the nation did hang an a-- fe at its disappointment on this occasion; neither would I prefume to compare the capacity of our heroic leaders to any fuch wooden convenience as a joint-stool or a close-stool; but only signify by this simile, the mistake the people committed in truffing to the union of two instruments that were never joined.

A day or two after the attempt on St. Lazar, the admiral ordered one of the Spanish men of war we had taken to be mounted with fixteen guns, and maned with detachments from our great ships in order to batter the town; accordingly, she was towed into the inner harbour in the night, and moored within half a mile of the walls, against which she began to fire at day-break; and continued about six hours exposed to the opposition of at least thirty pieces of cannon, which at length obliged our men to set her on fire, and get off as well as they could, in their boats. — This piece of conduct afforded matter of

speculation to all the wits either in the army or navy. who were at last fain to acknowledge it a stroke of policy above their comprehension. --- Some entertained fuch an irreverent opinion of the admiral's understanding, as to think he expected the town would furrender to his floating battery of fixteen guns: Others. imagined his fole intention was to try the enemy's. strength, by which he should be able to compute the number of great ships that would be necessary to a capitulation: But this last conjecture foon appeared groundless, in as much as no ships of any kind whatever were afterwards employed on that fervice. --- A third fort fwore, that no other cause could be affigned. for this undertaking, than that which induced Don-Quixote to attack the windmill. A fourth class. (and that the most numerous, though without doubt, composed of the fanguine and malicious) plainly taxed this commander with want of honesty as well as fense; and alledged that he ought to have facrificed private pique to the interest of his country; that where the lives of fo many brave fellow citizens were concerned. he ought to have concurred with the general, without being follicited or even defired, towards their prefervation and advantage; that if his arguments could not diffuade him from a desperate enterprize, it was his duty to have rendered it as practicable as possible. without running extreme hazard; that this could have been done, with a good prospect of success, by ordering five or fix large thips to batter the town while the land forces fromed the caftle; by thefe means a confiderable diversion would have been made in favour of those troops, who in their march to the affault, and in the retreat, fuffered much more from the town than from the castle; that the inhabitants feeing themselves vigorously attacked on all hands, would have been divided, distracted and confused, and in all probability, unable to resist the affailants. -- But all these suggestions surely proceed from.

from ignorance and malevolence, or el e the admiral would not have found it fuch an eafy matter, at his return to England, to justify his conduct to a minifirv at once fo upright aud discerning. --- True it is, that those who undertook to vindicate him on the spot, afferted, there was not water enough for our great ships near the town; though this was a little unfortunately urged, because there happened to be pilots in the fleet perfectly well acquainted with the foundings of the harbour, who affirmed there was water enough for five eighty gun ships to lye a-breast, almost un at the very walls. --- The disappointments we fuffered, occasioned an universal dejection, which was not at all alleviated by the objects that daily and hourly entertained our eyes, nor by the prospect of what must have inevitably happened, if we remained much longer in this place. --- Such was the ceconomy in some ships, that rather than be at the trouble of interring the dead, their commanders ordered their men to throw their bodies overboard, many without either ballast or winding-sheet; so that numbers of human carcasses floated in the harbour, until they were devoured by sharks and carrion crows; which afforded no agreeable spectacle to those who survived. --- At the fame time the wet feafon began, during which, a deluge of rain falls from the rifing to the fetting of the fun, without intermission; and that no sooner ceases, than it begins to thunder and lighten with fuch continual flashing, that one can see to read a very small print by the illumination.

get at most rapide to mind by the

the for following his manual 128

CHAP. XXIV.

An epidemick fewer rages among us — we abandon our conquests — I am seized with the distemper; write a petition to the captain, which is rejected ---- I am in danger of suffocation through the malice of Crampley; and relieved by a serjeant — my sever increases — the chaptain wants to confess me — I obtain a favourable criss — Morgan's affection for me proved — the behaviour of Mackshane and Crampley towards me --- Captain Oakhum is removed into another ship with bis beloved doctor --- our new captain described — an adventure of Morgan.

THE change of the atmosphere, occasioned by this phænomenon, conspired with the stench that surrounded us, the heat of the climate, our own constitutions impoverished by bad provision, and our despair, to introduce the bilious sever among us, which raged with such violence that three sourchs of those whom it invaded, died in a deplorable manner; the colour of their skin, being by the extreme putrefaction of their juices, changed into that of soot.

Our conductors finding things in this fituation, perceived it washigh time to relinquish our conquests; and this we did, after having rendered their artillery useless, and blown up their walls with gun-powder. --- Just as we sailed from Bocca Chica on our return to Jamaica, I found myself threatned with the symptons of this terrible distemper; and knowing very well that I stood no chance for my life, if I should be obliged to lie

lie in the cock-pit, which by this time, was grown intolerable even to people in health, by reason of the heat and unwholfome fmell of decayed provision; I wrote a petition to the captain, reprefenting my cafe, and humbly imploring his permission to lie among the foldiers in the middle-deck, for the benefit of the ir: But I might have spared myself the trouble; for this humane commander refused my request, and ordered me to continue in the place allotted for the furgeon's mates, or else be contented to lie in the hospital, which by the bye, was three degrees more offensive, and more fuffocating than our own birth below. ---Another in my condition, perhaps, would have fubmitted to his fate, and died in a pet; but I could not brook the thought of perishing so pitifully, after I had weathered fo many gales of hard fortune: I therefore, without minding Oakhum's injunction, prevailed upon the foldiers (whose good-will I had acquired) to admit my hammock among them; and actually congratulated myself upon my comfortable fituation; which Crampley no fooner understood, than he fignified to the captain, my contempt of his orders; and was invested with power to turn me down again into my proper habitation. - This barbarous piece of revenge, incenfed me fo much against the author, that I vowed, with bitter imprecations, to call him to a fevere account, if ever it should be in my power; and the agitation of my spirits increased my fever to a violent degree. --- While I lay gasping for breath in this infernal abode, I was visited by a ferjeant, the bones of whose nose I had reduced and fet to rights, after they had been demolished by a splinter during our last engagement: He being informed of my condition, offered me the use of his birth in the middle-deck, which was inclosed with canvas and well-aired by a port-hole that remained open within it. -- I embraced this proposal with joy, and was immediately conducted to the place, where I was treated, while my illness lasted, with the utmost tenderness

tenderness and care by this grateful halberdier, who had no other bed for himself than a hencoop, during the whole passage. --- Here I lay and enjoyed the breeze, notwithstanding of which, my malady gained ground, and at length my life was despaired of, though I never loft hopes of recovery, even when I had the mortification to fee, from my cabbin window, fix or feven thrown over-board every day, who died of the fame distemper. This confidence, I am persuaded, conduced a great deal to the preservation of my life, especially, when joined to another resolution I took at the beginning, namely, to refuse all medicine, which I could not help thinking co-operated with the difease, and instead of resisting putrefaction, promoted a total degeneracy of the vital fluid. - When my friend Morgan, therefore, brought his diaphoretic boluses, I put them in my mouth, 'tis true, but without any intention of swallowing them; and when he went away, fpit them out, and washed my mouth with water-gruel: I feemingly complied in this manner, that I might not affront the blood of Caractacus, by a refusal which might have intimated a diffidence of his physical capacity; for he acted as my physician; doctor Mackshane never once enquiring about me, or even knowing where I was. -- When my distemper was at the height, Morgan thought my cafe desperate, and after having applied a blifter to the nape of my neck, squeezed my hand, bidding me with a woful countenance, recommend myself to Got and my reteemer; then taking his leave, defired the chaplain to come and administer some spiritual consolation to me; but before he arrived, I made shift to rid myfelf of the troublesome application the Welchman had bestowed on my back. -- The parson having felt my pulse, enquired into the nature of my complaints, hemmed a little, and began thus: "Mr. Random, "God out of his infinite mercy hath been pleafed to e visit you with a dreadful distemper, the issue of which no man knows. --- You may be permitted

" to recover, and live many days on the face of the " earth; and, which is more probable, you may be " taken away and cut off in the flower of your "youth: It is incumbent on you, therefore, to prepare for the great change, by repenting fincere-" ly of your fins; of this there cannot be a greater " fign, than an ingenuous confession, which I con-" jure you to make, without hesitation, or mental " refervation; and when I am convinced of your fin-" cerity, I will then give you fuch comfort as the " fituation of your foul will admit of. Without "doubt, you have been guilty of numberless trans-" greffions, to which youth is subject, as swearing, " drunkenness, whoredom, and adultery; tell me " therefore without referve, the particulars of each, " especially of the last, that I may be acquainted with the true state of your conscience: For no physician " will prescribe for his patient until he knows the circumstances of his disease." As I was not under any apprehensions of death, I could not help smiling at the doctor's inquisitive remonstrance, which I told him favoured more of the Roman than of the Proteftant church in recommending auricular confession, a thing, in my opinion, not at all necessary to falvation, and which, for that reason, I declined. --- This reply disconcerted him a little; however, he explained away his meaning, in making learned diffinctions between what was absolutely necessary, and what was only convenient; then proceeded to ask what religion I professed: I answered, that I had not as yet confidered the difference of religions, confequently had not fixed on any one in particular, but that I was bred a Presbyterian. --- At this word the chaplain discovered great astonishment, and said, he could not comprehend how a Presbyterian was entitled to any post under the English government. -- Then he asked if I had ever received the Sacrament, or taken the oaths; to which I replying in the negative, he held up his hands, affured me he could do me no fervice, wished I might not be in a state of reprobation : and returned to his mess-mates, who were making merry in the ward-room, round a table well stored with bumbo * and wine. --- This infinuation, terrible as it was, had not fuch an effect upon me, as the fever, which, foon after he had left me, grew outragious; I began to fee strange chimeras, and concluded myself on the point of becoming delirious: But before that happened, was in great danger of fuffocation; upon which I started up in a kind of frantic fit, with an intention to plunge myself into the fea, and as my friend the ferjeant was not prefent, would certainly have cooled myself to some purpose, had I not perceived a moisture upon my thigh, as I endeavoured to get out of my hammock: The appearance of this revived my hopes, and I had reflection and refolution enough to take the advantage of this fa 'ourable fymptom, by tearing the fhirt from my body, and the sheets from my bed, and wrapping myself in a thick blanket, in which inclosure, for about a quarter of an hour, I felt the pains of hell; but it was not long before I was recompensed for my suffering by a profuse sweat, that bursting from the whole surface of my skin, in less than two hours, relieved me from all my complaints, except that of weakness; and left me as hungry as a kite. --- I enjoyed a very comfortable nap, after which I was regaling myself with the agreeable reverie of my future happiness, when I heard Morgan, on the outfide of the curtain, ask the ferjeant, if I was alive still? "Alive! (cried the other) God forbid he should be otherwise! he has " lain quiet these five hours, and I do not choose to disturb him, for sleep will do him great service." -- " Ay, faid my fellow-mate) he fleeps fo found, (look you) that he will never waken till the great " trump plows. --- Got be merciful to his foul. ---"He has paid his debt like an honest man. -- Ay, Bumbo is a liquor composed of rum, sugar, water and nutmeg.

" and

and moreover, he is at rest from all persecutions, " and troubles, and afflictions, of which, Got knows, " and I know, he had his own share. --- Ochree! "Ochree! he was a promising youth indeed!" ---So faying, he groaned grievously, and began to whine in fuch a manner, as perfuaded me he had a real friendship for me. --- The serjeant, alarmed at his words, came into the birth, and while he looked upon me, I smiled, and tipt him the wink; he immediately gueffed my meaning, and remained filent, which confirmed Morgan in his opinion of my being dead; whereupon he approached with tears in his eyes, in order to indulge his grief with a fight of the object: And I counterfeited death fo well, by fixing my eyes, and dropping my under-jaw, that he faid, "There he lies, no petter than a lump of clay, "Got help me." And observed by the distortion of my face, that I must have had a strong struggle. I should not have been able to contain myself much longer, when he began to perform the last duty of a friend, in closing my eyes and my mouth; upon which, I fuddenly fnapped at his fingers, and difcomposed him so much, that he started back, turned pale as ashes, and stared like the picture of horror: Although I could not help laughing at his appearance, I was concerned for his fituation, and stretched out my hand, telling him, I hoped to live and eat some falmagundy of his making in England. --- It was fometime before he could recollect himself so far as to feel my pulse, and enquire into the particulars of my disease: But when he found I had enjoyed a favourable crifis, he congratulated me upon my good fortune; not failing to ascribe it under Got, to the blifter he had applied to my back, at his last visit; which, by the bye, faid he, must now be removed and dressed: He was actually going to fetch dreffings, when I feigning aftonishment, faid, "Bless me; sure you never " applied a blifter to me - there is nothing on my " back, I affure you." - Of this he could not be convinced

vinced till he had examined it, and then endeavoured to conceal his confusion, by expressing his surprize in finding the skin untouched, and the plaister missing: In order to excuse myself for paying so little regard to his prescripton, I pretended to have been insensible when it was put on, and to have pulled it off afterwards, in a fit of delirium. This apology fatisfied my friend, who on this occasion abated a good deal of his stiffness in regard to punctilio's; and as we were now fafely arrived at Jamaica, where I had the benefit of fresh provision, and other refreshments, I recovered strength every day, and in a short time my health and vigour were perfectly re-established. ---When I got up at first, and was just able to crawl about the deck, with a staff in my hand, I met doctor Mackshane, who passed by me with a disdainful look, and did not youch fafe to honour me with one word: After him came Crampley, who strutting up to me, with a fierce countenance, pronounced, "Here's fine " discipline on board, when such lazy skulking " fons of bitches as you, are allowed, on pretence of fickness, to lollop at your ease, while your bet-" ters are kept to hard duty!" --- The fight and behaviour of this malicious scoundrel, enraged me so much, that I could scarce refrain from laying my cudgel across his pate; but when I considered my prefent feebleness, and the enemies I had in the ship, who wanted only a pretence to ruin me, I restrained my passion, and contented myself with telling him, I had not forgot his infolence and malice, and that I hoped we should meet one day on shore. --- At this he grinned, shook his fift at me, and swore he longed for nothing more than fuch an opportunity.

Mean while our ship was ordered to be heaved down, victualled and watered, for her return to England; and our captain, for some reason or other, not thinking it convenient for him to revisit his native country at this time, exchanged with a gentleman, who on the other hand wished for nothing so much,

as to be fafe without the tropick; all his care and tenderness of himself, being insufficient to preserve his complexion from the injuries of the sun and weather.

Our tyrart having left the ship, and carried his favourite Mackshane along with him, to my inexpressible satisfaction, our new commander came on board, in a ten-oar'd barge, overshadowed with a vast umbrella, and appeared in every thing the reverse of Oakhum, being a tall, thin, young man, dreffed in this manner; a white hat garnished with a red feather, adorned his head, from whence his hair flowed upon his shoulders, in ringlets tied behind with a ribbon. --- His coat confifting of pink-coloured filk, lined with white, by the elegance of the cut retired backward, as it were, to discover a white sattin waistcoat embroidered with gold, unbuttoned at the upper part to display a broch set with garnets, that glittered in the breast of his shirt, which was of the finest cambrick, edged with right Mechlin: The knees of his crimfon velvet breeches scarce descended so low as to meet his filk flockings, which rose without spot or wrinkle on his meagre legs, from shoes of blue Meroquin, fludded with diamond buckles that flamed forth rivals to the fun! A steel hilted fword, inlaid with gold, and decked with a knot of ribbon which fell down in a rich tossle, equipped his side; and an amberheaded cane hung dangling from his wrist: -- But the most remarkable parts of his furniture were, a mask on his face, and white gloves on his hands, which did not feem to be put on with an intention to be pulled off occasionally, but were fixed with a curious ring on the little finger on each hand. --- In this garb, captain Whiffle, for that was his name, took pollession of the ship, furrounded with a crowd of attendants, all of whom, in their different degrees, feemed to be of their patron's disposition; and the air was so impregnated with perfumes, that one may venture to affirm the clime of Arabia Fœlix was not half so sweet scented. --- My fellow-mate, observing no surgeon among VUL. I.

his train, thought he had found an occasion too favourable for himself to be neglected; and remembring the old proverb, " Spare to speak, and spare to " fpeed," refolved to follicit the new captain's interest immediately, before any other furgeon could be appointed for the ship. --- With this view he repaired to the cabbin in his ordinary drefs, confifting of a checkthirt and trousers, a brown linen waiftcoat, and a night-cap of the same, (neither of them very clean) which for his further misfortune, happened to smell strong of tobacco. -- Entering without any ceremony into this facred place, he found captain Whiffle repoling upon a couch, with a wrapper of fine chintz about his body, and a muslin cap bordered with lace upon his head; and after feveral low conge's began in this manner: ---- "Sir, I hope you will for-"give, and excuse, and pardon the presumption of one who has not the honour of being known unto you, but who is nevertheless, a shentleman porn and pred, and moreover, has had misfortunes, "Got help me, in the world." --- Here he was interrupted by the captain, who on feeing him, had flarted up with great amazement at the novelty of the apparition; and having recollected himself, pronounced with a look and tone fignifying disdain, curiofity and furprize, "Zauns! who art thou?" ---- "I am " furgeon's first mate on board of this ship, (replied " Morgan) and I most vehemently defire and befeech wou with all submission, to be pleased to condefeend and vouchfafe to enquire into my character, and my pehaviour, and my deferts, which, under "Got, I hope, will entitle me to the vacancy of " furgeon." --- As he proceeded in his speech, he continued advancing towards the captain, whose noftrils were no fooner faluted with the aromatic flavour that exhaled from him, than he cried with great emotion, "Heaven pre'erve me! I am suffocated! " --- Fel'ow, fellow, away with thee --- Curfe " thee, fellow! get thee gone, - I shall be stunk to " death!"

death!" At the noise of his outcries, his servants ran into his apartment, and he accosted them " thus; Villains! cut-throats! traitors! I am " betrayed! I am facrificed! ---- Will you not " carry that monster away? or must I be stifled with " the stench of him? oh! oh!" -- With these interjections, he funk down upon his fettee in a fit; his valet de chambre plied him with a smelling bottle, one footman chafed his temples with Hungary water. another sprinkled the floor with spirits of lavender, a third pushed Morgan out of the cabbin; who coming to the place where I was, fat down with a demure countenance, and, according to his cultom, when he received any indignity which he durst not revenge, began to fing a Welch ditty. --- I guessed he was under some agitation of spirits, and desired to know the cause; but instead of answering me directly, he asked with great emotion, if I thought him a monster and a ftinkard? " A monfter and a ftinkard (faid I, " with fome furprize) did any body call you to?" " -- Got is my judge (replied he) captain Fifle did " call me both; ay, and all the water in the Tawy " will not wash it out of my remembrance. -- I do " affirm, and avouch, and maintain, with my foul, " and my pody, and my plood, look you, that I " have no smells about me, but such as a christian " ought to have, except the effluvia of tobacco. " which is a cephalic, odoriferous, aromatic herb. " and he is a fon of a mountain-goat who fays other-" wife. --- As for my being a monster, let that be as " it is; I am as Got was pleafed to create me, which, " peradventure, is more than I shall-aver of him who se gave me that title; for I will proclaim it before " the world, that he is disguised and transfigured, and " transmographied with affectation and whimsies; " and that he is more like a papoon than one of the " human race."

d

-

1

f

e

F-

u

!

fe

to

C H A P. XXVII.

Captain Whiffle sends for me, -bis situation described - bis surgeon arrives, prescribes for bim, and puts bim to bed - a bed is put up for Mr. Simper contiguous to the state-room, which, with other parts of the captain's behaviour, gives the ship's company a very unfavourable idea of their commander - I am detained in the West-Indies, by the admiral, and go on board of the Lizard sloop of war in quality of surgeon's mate, where I make myself known to the surgeon, who treats me very kindly. - I go on shore, fell my ticket, purchase necessaries, and at my return on board, am surprized at the fight of Crampley, who is appointed lieutennant of the floop - we fail on a cruize take a prize, in which I arrive at Port Morant, under the command of my mess-mate, with whom I live in great barmony. hiswered " Northborn twelle militaria

He was going on with an elogium upon the captain, when I received a message to clean myself, and go up to the great cabbin: This I immediately performed, sweetning myself with rose-water from the medicine-chest. When I entered the room, I was ordered to stand by the door, until captain Whissle had reconnoitered me at a distance, with a spy-glass. He having consulted one sense in this manner, bade me advance gradually, that his nose might have intelligence, before it could be much offended: I therefore approached with great caution and success, and he was pleased to say, "Ay, this

have

creature is tolerable." --- I found him lolling on his couch with a languishing air, his head supported by his valet de chambre, who from time to time applied a smelling-bottle to his nose. -- "Vergette, " faid he in a fqueaking tone) dost thou think this " wretch (meaning me) will do me no injury? may " I venture to submit my arm to him?" -- "Pon my vord, (replied the valet) I do tink dat dere be " great occasion for your honour losing one small " quantite of blodt; and the young man ave gulque. " chose of de bonne mine. --- Well then (faid his mas-" ter) I think I must venture." --- Then addressing. himself to me, "Hast thou ever blooded any body " but brutes ? -- But I need not ask thee, for thou " wilt tell me a most damnable lie." -- "Brutes. " Sir, (answered I, pulling down his glove in order " to feel his pulse) I never meddle with brutes." --- " What the devil art thou about? (cried he) dost " thou intend to twist off my hand? Gad's curse! " my arm is benumbed up to the very shoulder! " Heaven have mercy upon me! must I perish under " the hands of favages; What an unfortunate dog was I to come on board without my own furgeon, "Mr. Simper."---I craved pardon for having handled him fo roughly, and with the utmost care and tenderness tied up his arm with a fillet of sidk. While I was feeling for the vein, he defired to know how much blood I intended to take from him, and when I answered, "Not above twelve ounces;" started up with a look full of horror, and bid me begone, fwearing I had a delign upon his life. -- Vergette appealed. him with difficulty, and opening a bureau, took out a pair of scales, in one of which was placed a small cup; and putting them into my hand, told me, the captain never loft above an ounce and three drachms at one time. -- While I prepared for this important evacuation, there came into the cabbin, a young man gayly dreffed, of a very delicate complexion, with a kind of languid smile on his face, which seemed to N 3

have been rendered habitual, by a long course of affectation. --- The captain no fooner perceived him, than rifing haftily, he flew into his arms, crying, " O! my dear Simper! I am exceffively difordered! " I have been betrayed, frighted, murdered by the " negligence of my fervants, who fuffered a beaft, a " mule, a bear, to surprize me, and stink me into " convulsions with the fumes of tobacco." -- Simper, who by this time, I found was obliged to art for the clearness of his complexion, assumed an air of softness and sympathy, and lamented with many tender expressions of forrow, the fad accident that had thrown him into that condition; then feeling his patient's pulse on the outlide of his glove, gave it as his opinion, that his diforder was entirely nervous, and that some drops of tincture of castor and liquid laudanum would be of more service to him than bleeding, by bridling the inordinate fallies of his fpirits, and compoling the fermentation of his bile. -- I was therefore fent to prepare this prescription, which was administred in a glass of sack posset, after the captain had been put to bed, and orders fent to the officers on the quarter-deck, to let no body walk on that fide under which he lay.

While the captain enjoyed his repose, the doctor watched over him, and indeed became to necessary, that a cabbin was made for him contiguous to the stateroom, where Whiffle flept, that he might be at hand in case of accidents in the night. -- Next day, our commander being happily recovered, gave orders, that none of the lieutenants should appear upon deck without a wig, fword, and ruffles; nor any midfhipman, or other petty officer, be feen with a check thirt, or dirty linen. --- He also prohibited any perfon whatever, except Simper and his own fervants, from coming into the great cabbin, without first fending in to obtain leave. --- These singular regulations did not prepoffels the ship's company in his fayour; but on the contrary, gave fcandal an opportunity

nity to be very bufy with his character, and accuse him of maintaining a correspondence with his surgeon not fit to be named.

In a few weeks our fhip was under failing orders, and I was in hopes of revisiting my native country in a very fhort time, when the admiral's furgeon came on board, and fending for Morgan and me to the quarter deck, gave me to understand there was a great scarcity of surgeons in the West-Indies; that he was commanded to detain one mate out of every great fhip that was bound for England; and defired us to agree between ourselves, before the next day at that hour, which of us should stay behind. --- We were thunder-struck at this proposal, and stared at one another fome time, without speaking; at length the Welchman broke filence, and offered to remain in the West-Indies, provided the Admiral would give him a surgeon's warrant immediately: But he was told there was no want of chief furgeons, and that he must be contented with the station of mate. till he should be further provided for in due course: Whereupon Morgan flatly refused to quit the ship for which the commissioners of the navy had appointed him; and the other told him as plainly, that if we could not determine the affair by ourselves before to-morrow morning, he must cast lots, and abide by his chance. - When I recalled to my remembrance the miseries I had undergone in England, where I had not one friend to promote my interest, or favour my advancement in the navy, and at the fame time reflected on the prefent dearth of furgeons in the West-Indies, and the unhealthiness of the climate, which every day, almost reduced the number, I could not help thinking my fuccess would be much more certain and expeditious, by flaying where I was, than by returning to Europe. - I therefore refolved to comply with a good grace, and next day, when we were ordered to throw dice, told Morgan, he needed not trouble himself, for I would voluntarily submit to

the admiral's pleasure. — This frank declaration was commended by the gentleman, who assured me, it should not fare the worse with me for my resignation: Indeed he was as good as his word, and that very asternoon procured a warrant, appointing me surgeon's mate of the Lizzard sloop of war, which put me on a

footing with every first mate in the service.

My ticket being made out, I put my chest and bedding on board a canoe that lay along fide, and having shook hands with my trusty friend the ferjeant, and honest Jack Rattlin, who was bound for Greeenwich-hospital, I took my leave of Morgan with many tears, after we had exchanged our fleevebuttons as remembrances of each other. - Having presented my new warrant to the captain of the Lizard, I enquired for the doctor, whom I no fooner faw, than I recollected him to be one of those young fellows with whom I had been committed to the round-house, during our frolick with Jackson, as I have related before. - He received me with a good deal of courtefy, and when I put him in mind of our former acquaintance, expressed great joy at seeing me again, and recommended me to an exceeding good mels, composed of the gunner and master's mate. -As there was not one fick person in the ship I got leave to go a shore, next day, with the gunner, who recommended me to a Tew, that bought my ticket at the rate of 40 per cent. discount; and having furnished myself with what necessaries I wanted, returned on board in the evening, and to my furprize, found my old antagonist Crampley walking upon deck .-- Tho' I did not fear his enmity, I was shocked at his appearance, and communicated my fentiments on that fubject to Mr. Tomlins the furgeon, who told me that Crampley, by dint of fome friends about the admiral, had procured a commission constituting him lieutenant on board the Lizzard: and advised me, now he was my superior officer, to behave with some respect towards him, or else he would find a thousand opportunities

opportunities of using me ill.—This advice was a bitter potion to me, whom pride and resentment had rendered utterly incapable of the least submission to, or even of reconciliation with the wretch, who had, on many occasions, treated me so inhumanly: However, I resolved to have as little connection as possible with him, and to ingratiate myself as much as I could with the rest of the officers, whose friendship might be a bulwark to defend me from the at-

tempts of his malice.

In less than a week we failed on a cruize, and having got round the east end of the island, had the good fortune to take a Spanish barcolongo, with her prize, which was an English ship bound for Bristol, that failed from Jamaica a fortnight before, without convoy. All the prisoners who were well, were put on shore on the north side of the island; the prizes were manned with Englishmen, and the command of the barcolongo, given to my friend the master's mate, with orders to carry them into Port Morant, and there to remain until the Lizzard's cruize should be ended, at which time she would touch at the same place in her way to Port-Royal --- With him I was fent to attend the wounded Spaniards as well as Englishmen, who amounted to fixteen, and to take care of them on shore, in a house that was to be hired as an hospital .-- This destination gave me a great deal of pleasure, as I should, for some time, be freed from the arrogance of Crampley, whose inveteracy against me had already broke out on two or three occasions fince he was become a lieutenant .-- My mess-mate, who very much resembled my uncle, both in figure and disposition, treated me on board of the prize with the utmost civility and confidence; and, among other favours, made me a present of a filver hilted hanger, and a pair of piftols mounted with the same metal, which fell to his fhare in plundering the enemy .--- We arrived fafely at Morant, and going afhore, pitched upon an empty ftore-25.77

The ADVENTURES of

274

store-house, which we hired for the reception of the wounded, who were brought to it next day, with beds and other necessaries; and four of the ship's company appointed to attend them, and obey me.

CHAP. XXXVI.

A strange adventure—in consequence of which I am extremely happy—Crampley does me ill offices with the captain: But his malice is defeated by the good-nature and friendship of the surgeon—we return to Port-Royal—our captain gets the command of a larger ship, and is succeeded by an old man—Brayl is prowided for—we receive orders to sail for England.

THEN my patients were all in a fair way, my companion and commander, whose name was Brayl, carried me up the country to the house of a rich planter, with whom he was acquainted; where we were fumptuously entertained, and in the evening fet out on our return to the ship. When we had walked about a mile by moon-light, we perceived a horseman behind us, who coming up, wished us good even, and asked which way we went : His voice, which was quite familiar to me, no fooner fruck my ear, than, in spite of all my resolution and reflection, my hair brifled up, and I was feized with a violent fit of trembling, which Brayl mifinterpreting, bid me be under no concern.-I told him he was mistaken in the cause of my disorder; and addressing myself to the person on horseback, said, "I could have sworn by your voice, sthat you was a dear friend of mine, if I had not " been certain of his death."-To this, after some pause, he replied, "There are many voices as well as faces that refemble one another; but pray, what 66 Was " was your friend's name ?" I fatisfied him in that particular, and gave a fhort detail of the melancholy fate of Thomson, not without many fighs and some tears. A filence enfued which lasted some minutes. and then the convertation turned on indifferent fubjects, till we arrived at a house on the road, where the horseman alighted, and begged with so much earnestness, that we would go in and drink a bowl of punch with him, that we could not relift .-- But if I was alarmed at his voice, what must my amazement be, when I discovered by the light, the very person of my lamented friend! Perceiving my confusion, which was extreme, he clasped me in his arms, and bedewed my face with tears .-- It was some time ere I recovered the use of my reason, overpowered with this' event, and longer still before I could speak. So that all I was capable of, was to return his embraces, and to mingle the overflowings of my joy with his while honelt Brayl, affected with the scene, wept as fast as either of us, and signified his participation of our happiness, by hugging us both, and capering about the room like a mad-man. -- At length I retrieved the use of my tongue, and cried, " Is it " possible, can you be my friend Thomson? No certainly, alas! he was drowned! and I am now " under the deception of a dream !"---He was at great pains to convince me of his being the individual person whom I regretted, and bidding me sit down and compose myself, promised to explain his sudden disappearance from the Thunder, and to account for his being at prefent in the land of the living .-- This he acquitted himself of, after I had drank a glass of punch, and recollected myself; by informing us, that with a determination to rid himself of a miserable existence, he had gone in the night-time to the head, while the ship was on her way, from whence he flipped down, as foftly as he could by the bows, into the fea, where, after he was heartily ducked, he began to repent of his precipitation, and as he could fwim very well, kept himself above water, in hopes of being taken up by some of the ships aftern;--that in this fituation, he hailed a large veffel, and begged to be taken in, but was answered, that she was a heavy failor, and therefore they did not choose to lofe time, by bringing too; however, they threw an old cheft over-board, for his convenience, and told him, that some of the ships aftern would certainly fave him; -- that no other vessel came within sight or cry of him, for the space of three hours, during which time he had the mortification to find himself in the middle of the ocean alone, without support or restingplace, but what a few crazy boards afforded; till at last, he discerned a small sloop steering towards him, upon which he fet up his throat, and had the good fortune to be heard and rescued from the dreary. waste, by their boat, which was hoisted out on purpofe.- "I was no fooner brought on board (con-"tinued he) than I fainted when I recovered " my fenses, found myfelf in bed, regaled with a " most noisome smell of onions and cheese, which " made me think at first, that I was in my own " hammock, along-fide of honest Morgan, and that " all which had paffed was no more than a dream .---"Upon enquiry I understood that I was on board of " a schooner belong to Rhode Island, bound for Ja-" maica, with a cargo of geefe, pigs, onions, and " cheefe; and that the mafter's name was Robertson, " by birth a North Britain, whom I knew at first " fight to be an old school-fellow of mine. -- When "I discovered myself to him, he was transported " with furprize and joy, and begged to know the occasion of my misfortune, which I did not think " fit to disclose, because I knew his notions with re-" gard to religion, were very fevere and confined; "therefore contended myself with telling him, I " fell over-board by accident; but made no scruple " of explaining the nature of my disagreeable sta-"tion, and of acquainting him with my determined 66 purpose

purpose neverto return to the Thunder man of war." " --- Although he was not of my opinion in that par-" ticular, knowing that I must lose my cloaths, and " what pay was due to me, unless I went back to " my duty; yet, when I described the circumstances " of the hellish life I led, under the tyrannic fway " of Oakhum and Mackshane; and among other " grievances, hinted a diffatisfaction at the irreligi-"ous deportment of my ship-mates, and the want " of the true prefbyterian gospel doctrine; he changed " his fentiments, and conjured me with great vehe-" mence and zeal to lay afide all thoughts of rifing " in the navy; and that he might shew how much " he had my interest at heart, undertook to provide "for me in some shape or other, before he should " leave Jamaica, -- This he performed to my heart's " defire, by recommending me to a gentleman of " fortune, with whom I have lived ever fince, in " quality of furgeon and overfeer to his plantations. "-He and his lady are now at Kingston, so that "I am, for the present, master of this house, to " which, from my foul, I bid you welcome, and 66 hope you will favour me with your company dur-" ing the remaining part of the night." --- I needed not a fecond invitation; but Mr. Brayl, who was a diligent and excellent officer, could not be perfuaded to fleep out of the ship; However, he supped with us, and after having drank a chearful glass, set out for the veffel, which was not above three miles from the place, escorted by a couple of stout negroes, whom Mr. Thomson ordered to conduct him .----Never were two friends more happy in the converfation of each other than we, for the time it lasted: I related to him the particulars of our attempt upon Carthagena, of which he had heard but an imperfect account; and he gratified me with a narration of every little incident of his life fince we parted .---He affured me, it was with the utmost difficulty he could refult his inclination of coming down to Port-

Royal to see Morgan and me, of whom he had heard no tidings fince the day of our feparation; but that he was restrained by the fear of being detained as a deferter .-- He told me, that when he heard my voice in the dark, he was almost as much surprized as I was at feeing him afterwards; and in the confidence of friendship, disclosed a passion he entertained for the only daughter of the gentleman with whom he lived, who, by his description, was a very amiable young lady, and did not disdain his addresses; that he was very much favoured by her parents, and did not despair of obtaining their consent to the match, which would at once render him independent of the world .-- I congratulated him on his good fortune, which he protested should never make him forget his friends; and towards morning we betook ourselves

Next day he accompanied me to the ship, where Mr. Brayl entertained him at dinner, and we having spent the afternoon together, he took his leave of us in the evening, after he had forced upon me ten pistoles, as a small token of his affection.—In short, while we staid here, we saw one another every day, and generally eat at the same table, which was plentifully supplied by him, with all kinds of poultry, butcher's meat, oranges, limes, lemons, pine-apples, Madeirawine, and excellent rum; so that this small interval of ten days, was by far the most agreeable period of my life.

At length, the Lizzard arrived; and as my patients were all fit for duty, they and I were ordered on board of her, where I understood from Mr. Tomlins, that there was a dryness between the lieutenant and him, on my account; that rancorous villain having taken the opportunity of my absence, to fill the captain's ears with a thousand scandalous stories, to my prejudice; among other things affirming, that I had been once transported for thest, and that when I was in the Thunder man of war I had been whipt for the same crime.—The surgeon, on the other

t

hand, having heard my whole ftory from my own mouth, defended me strenuously, and in the course of that good natur'd office, recounted all the inflances of Crampley's malice against me, while I remained on board of that thip, --- Which declaration, while it fatisfied the captain of my innocence, made the lieutenant as much my defender's enemy as mine. This infernal behaviour of Crampley, with regard to me, added fuch fuel to my former refentment, that at certain times, I was quite beside myself with the defire of revenge, and was even tempted to piftol him on the quarter-deck, though an infamous death must inevitably have been my reward .--- But the furgeon, who was my confident, argued against such a defperate action so effectually, that I stifled the flame which confumed me, for the present, and resolved to wait for a more convenient opportunity .-- In the mean time, that Mr. Tomlins might be the more convinced of the wrongs I fuffered by this fellow's flander, I begged he would go and vifit Mr. Thomson, whose wonderful escape I had made him aoquainted with, and enquire of him into the particulars of my conduct, while he was my fellow-mate. This the furgeon complied with, more through curiofity to fee a person whose fate had been so extraordinary, than to confirm his good opinion of me, which, he affured me, was already firmly established. --- He therefore fet out for the dwelling-place of my friend, with a letter of introduction from me; and being received with all the civility and kindness I expected, returned to the ship, not only satisfied with my character, beyond the power of doubt or infinuation, but also charmed with the affability and conversation of Thomson, who loaded him and me with prefents of fresh stock, liquors and fruit. As he would not venture to come and fee us on board, left Crampley should know and detain him; when the time of our departure approached, I obtained leave to go and bid him farewel .--- After we had vowed an everlafting

e

S

re

rg

us

en rt,

iy,

ti-

ra-

l of ife.

pared

omnant

lain

fill

ries, that

then thipt

ther

ing friendship, he pressed upon me a purse with four doubloons, which I refused as long as I could, without giving umbrage; and having cordially embraced each other, I returned on board, where I found a fmall box, with a letter directed for me, to the care of Mr. Tomlins -- Knowing the superscription to be of Thomson's hand-writing, I opened it with some Surprize, and learned that this generous friend, not contented with loading me with the prefents already mentioned, had fent for my use and acceptance, half a dozen fine shirts, and as many linen waistcoats and caps, with twelve pair of new thread-stockings .---Being thus provided with money, and all necessaries for the comfort of life, I began to look upon myfelf as a gentleman of some consequence, and felt my pride dilate apace.

Next day we failed for Port-Royal, where we arrived fafely with our prizes; and as there was nothing to do on board, I went ashore, and having purchased a laced waiftcoat, with some other cloaths at a vendue, made a fwaggering figure for fome days, among the taverns, where I ventured to play a little at hazard, and came off with fifty pittoles in my pocket. Mean while our captain was promoted to a ship of twenty guns, and the command of the Lizzard given to a man turned of fourfcore, who had been lieutenant fince the reign of King William to this time, and notwithstanding his long service, should have probably died in that station, had he not applied fome prize-money he had lately received, to make interest with his superiors. My friend Brayl was also made an officer about the fame time, after he had ferved in quality of a midfhipman and mate five and twenty years. Soon after these alterations, the admiral pitched upon our ship to carry home dispatches for the ministry; accordingly we set fail for England, having first scrubbed her bottom, and taken in provision and water for the occasion. stories in the first on the contracts

The END of the FIRST